

THE
HISTORY
AND
ADVENTURES
OF THE RENOWNED
DON QUIXOTE.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH OF
MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,
SOME ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S LIFE.

BY
DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.



EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

Dublin :

Printed by T. HENSHALL, No. 3, Bride-Street,
Near Werburgh-Street.



THE
ATCHIEVEMENTS
OF THE SAGE AND VALIANT
DON QUIXOTE.

PART I. BOOK III.

CHAPTER IX.

Of what befel the renowned Don Quixote in the Brown Mountain; being one of the most surprising Adventures which is recounted in this true History.

DON Quixote, finding himself so evil entreated, said to his squire, 'I have always heard it observed, Sancho, that benefits conferred on base-minded people are like drops of water thrown into the sea. Had I taken thy advice, I might have avoided this vexation; but now the affair is over, we must have recourse to patience, and take warning for the future.'—Yes, replied Sancho, 'your worship will take warning as sure as I am a Turk; but since you allow, that if you had taken my advice, you would have avoided this misfortune, take my advice now, and you will avoid a greater still! for I give you notice, that all your errantry will stand you in little stead against the holy brotherhood, who do't value all the knights errant in the universe three farthings; and, in faith, this minute methinks I hear the arrows buzzing about my ears.' 'Thou art naturally a coward, Sancho, said the knight; but that thou mayest have no reason to say I am obstinate, and never follow thy counsel, for once thou shalt prevail; I will retreat from the danger thou dreatest so much; but it shall be on condition, that thou shalt never, either in life or death, hint to any person whatsoever, that I retired and avoided this peril through fear, but merely in compliance with thy earnest request; for to say

A 2 otherwise

otherwise would be to propagate falsehood; and from this hour to that, and from that hour to this, I give thee the lye, and affirm thou lyest, and wilt lye, as often as thou wilt say or think any such thing: make no reply, therefore; the very thought of my being supposed to abscond or retreat from danger, especially from this, as it implies some sort of shadow of fear, inspires me with such courage, that here am I alone ready to remain, and expect not only the holy brotherhood, which thou hast mentioned with fear and trembling, but also the brothers of the twelve tribes of Israel, those of the seven Maccabees, with Castor and Pollux, and all the brethren and brotherhoods in the universe.'—'Sir,' replied Sancho, 'to retreat is not to fly; nor is it prudent to tarry when the danger overbalances the hope; and it is always the practice of wise people to reserve something for to-morrow, without venturing all upon one cast; and you must know, that though I be a rustick and a clown, I have all my life-time had a small share of what is called good conduct; wherefore you need not repent of having taken my advice but mount Rozinante, if you can; if not, I will lend you my assistance, and follow me; for this noddle of mine tells me that at present, we have more need of heels than of hands.'

Don Quixote accordingly mounted, without the least reply; and Sancho leading the way upon his ass they took refuge in that part of the brown mountain which was nearest, the squire intending to go quite across to Viso or Almodavar del Campo, after they should have lurked for some days among the rocks, that they might not be found, in case the holy brotherhood should come in search of them: he was encouraged to this resolution, by seeing, that in the scuffle with the galley slaves, the provisions his ass carried had escaped untouched*; a circumstance that, in his opinion, amounted to a miracle, considering what the thieves had taken, and how narrowly they had searched.

That

* This is an oversight of the author, who seems to have forgot that Sancho lost his wallet at the inn, and was robbed by



That evening they arrived in the very heart of the Sierra Morena*, where Sancho proposed to spend the night, and even to pass a few days, at least to stay as long as their store should last; accordingly they took up their lodging between two rocks in the midst of a great number of cork trees; but fate, which, according to the opinion of those who do not enjoy the light of the true faith, guides, conducts, and disposes all things after its own way, ordained that Gines de Passamonte, that famous robber and cheat, who had been delivered from the chain by the valour and madness of Don Quixote; I say fate ordained that he, impelled by the fear of the holy brotherhood, which he did not dread without good reason, happened likewise to take refuge in those mountains; and even to be carried by this fear to the same place whither the same principle had directed Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, just time enough to know who they were, notwithstanding their being gone to sleep. As the wicked are always ungrateful, and necessity puts them to their shifts, and the present convenience overcomes the prospect of future quiet; Gines, who was neither grateful or good-natured, resolved to steal Sancho's ass, undervaluing Rozinante as a subject that he could neither pawn or sell: accordingly, while the squire was asleep, he stole Dapple; and, before morning, was gone far enough to elude all pursuit.

The appearance of Aurora, that rejoices the earth, had a quite contrary effect upon Sancho Panza; who, missing his Dapple, and searching for him in vain, began to utter the most woeful lamentation that ever was heard; and Don Quixote waked by the noise, heard him exclaiming in this manner: 'O son of my bowels! born in my house, the play-fellow of my children, the delight of my spouse, the envy of my neighbours, and comfort of my cares! in short, the half of my sustenance: for with six and

A 3

twenty

by the galley slaves of the great coat, or cloak, in which he carried the remains of that provision he had taken from those who attended the dead body towards Segovia.

* A chain of dusky mountains that divide Castile from Andalusia.

twenty maravedis, which thou hast daily earned, did I defray one half of my family expence !' Don Quixote hearing this complaint, and being informed of the cause, consoled Sancho with all the arguments in his power ; and, begging him to have patience, promised to give him a bill of exchange, on sight of which he should receive three asses out of five which the knight had left at home. Sancho being comforted with this declaration, dried up his tears, moderated his sighs, and returned a thousand thanks to Don Quixote for his generosity. As they sauntered among the rocks, the knight's heart was rejoiced to see places so well adapted to those adventures he was in quest of ; for they called to his remembrance those wonderful events which had happened to knights-errant among such rocks and solitudes : he went on, musing on these subjects, and indeed so wrapped up and engrossed by them, that he minded nothing else ; while Sancho's only care, now that he thought he travelled in safety, was to satisfy his appetite with what remained of the spoils of the clergy ; he therefore jogged on leisurely after his master ; sitting side-ways on his ass*, and replenishing his own bags out of that which contained the provision ; and while he was thus employed, would not have given a farthing for the best adventure that could happen.

Chancing, however, to lift up his eyes, he perceived his master had stopped and was endeavouring, with the point of his lance, to raise some bundle that lay upon the ground ; he therefore hastened up to him, in order to lend his assistance, should it be found necessary ; and arrived just as the knight had turned up with his lance, a pillion with a portmanteau fixed to it, all rotted and consumed by the weather ; but so heavy, that Sancho was obliged to alight, in order to take them up. His master having ordered him to examine the contents of the portmanteau, he obeyed with great alacrity ; and though it was thut with a chain and padlock, there were so

* Here Cervantes hath been caught napping by the critics ; who observe, that Sancho could not be mounted on the ass, which was but just now stolen by Gines de Passamonte,





so many holes in it, that he soon reached the inside, where he found four shirts of fine Holland, with other provision of linen, equally fashionable and clean, together with a pretty large heap of crowns of gold, wrapped up in a rag; which he no sooner perceived, than he cried in a rapture. 'Blessed be Heaven for granting us one advantageous adventure!' then continuing his search, he found a pocket-book richly garnished which Don Quixote desired to have, bidding him keep the money for his own use. Sancho kissed his hand for the favour, and taking the linen out of the portmanteau, crammed it into the bag that held their provision.

The knight having considered the whole affair, 'Sancho,' said he, 'I am of opinion, and cannot possibly be mistaken, that some bewildered traveller, in his passage over these mountains, has been set upon by robbers, who, having slain him, must have dragged his body to be buried in this unfrequented place.'—'That cannot be the case,' answered the squire; 'for if they had been robbers, they would not have left the money behind them.'—'Thou art in the right,' said Don Quixote; 'and I cannot guess nor conceive what the matter can have been. Let us see if there be anything written in this pocket-book, by which we may trace out and come to the certainty of what we want to know.' He opened it accordingly, and the first thing he found was the rough draught, though very legible, of a sonnet, which he read aloud for the benefit of Sancho, in these words.

I.

LOVE either cruel is or blind;
Or still unequal to the cause,
Is this distemper of the mind,
That with infernal torture gnaws.

II.

But Love's a god, and cruelty
In heav'nly breasts can never dwell:
Then say by what authority
I'm doom'd to feel the pains of hell.

III.

Of all my sufferings and my woe,
Is Chloe then the fatal source?
Sure ill from good can never flow,
Nor so much beauty gild a curse.

IV.

IV.

With hopeless misery weigh'd down,
 I'll seek for quiet in the grave ;
 For when the malady's unknown,
 A miracle alone can save.

'From such rhyme,' said Sancho, 'there is no information to be got, unless by that Clue we could come to the bottom of the affair*.'—'What clue dost thou mean?' said the knight, 'The clue your worship mentioned just now in the Sonnet,' answered the squire. 'I mentioned no clue,' replied Don Quixote, 'but Chloë, which is without doubt the name of the lady of whom the author of these verses complains; and really he must have been a very ingenious poet, or else I know very little of the art.'—'Then your worship understands crambo?' said the squire. 'Better than you imagine,' answered the knight, 'as you will see when you carry from me a letter to my mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, written in verse from top to bottom; for thou must know, Sancho, that all, or the greatest part, of the knights-errant who lived in former ages, were very much addicted to poetry and musick; these two qualities, or rather gifts of nature, being annexed to all errants in love; though the truth is, their couplets were rather sprightly than elegant.'—'I wish your worship would read on,' said Sancho; 'perhaps you may find something more to our satisfaction.' Accordingly the knight having turned over the leaf, 'Here is prose,' said he; 'and seems to be a letter.' Sancho asking if it was upon business, his master replied, 'In the beginning there was nothing but love.'—'Pray, Sir,' cried Sancho, 'read it aloud, for I am highly delighted with matters of love.'—'With all my heart,' answered

* As it is impossible to preserve the original blunders of Sancho, who mistakes *Filo*, or *Phillis*, for *Hilo*, that signifies a thread, we are oblig'd to substitute another, by changing *Phillis* into *Chloë*, which Sancho, in English, might have as naturally mistaken for a clue; and by this expedient the sense of the passage is not hurt, and but very little altered.

answered Don Quixote ; who raising his voice, in compliance with the squire's request, read what follows.

' Thy false promises, together with the certainty of my misfortune, have exiled me to a corner of the world, from whence thou wilt hear an account of my death, before this my complaint shall reach thine ears. Thou hast cast me off, ungrateful as thou art, in favour of one who, though he is richer, is not a more deserving lover than me : for if virtue were the wealth that is most esteemed, I should have no cause to envy the happiness of others, or to bewail my own mishap. What thy beauty had raised, thy behaviour has overthrown : by the first I mistook thee for an angel, by the last I discovered thee to be a woman. Mayest thou live in peace, fair authoress of my misfortunes ; and Heaven grant that the deceit of thy husband may never be disclosed, that thou mayest never repent of what thou hast done, nor I enjoy the revenge I do not desire !'

Don Quixote having read this letter, observed, that nothing else could be inferred either from it, or the verses, but that the author was some despairing lover. Then perusing the rest of the book, he found more verses and letters, some legible, and others not intelligible ; but the substance of them all was composed of complaints, lamentations, suspicions, desires, disgusts, favours, and disdain, some of which were extolled, and others deplored.—While Don Quixote examined the book, Sancho rummaged the portmanteau, without leaving a corner in that or the pillion which he did not search, pry into, and overhaul ; no seam was left unripped, no lock of wool unpicked, that nothing might be lost through negligence and want of care ; so much was his cupidity awakened by finding the money, which amounted to more than a hundred crowns ; and though he reaped no fruit from his industry, he thought himself abundantly requited for his capers in the blanket, his vomit of the balsam, the benediction of the pack-staves, the fifty-cuffs of the carrier, the loss of his bags, the robbery of his great coat, with

IV.

With hopeless misery weigh'd down,
 I'll seek for quiet in the grave ;
 For when the malady's unknown,
 A miracle alone can save.

'From such rhyme,' said Sancho, 'there is no information to be got, unless by that Clue we could come to the bottom of the affair*.'—'What clue dost thou mean?' said the knight, 'The clue your worship mentioned just now in the Sonnet,' answered the squire. 'I mentioned no clue,' replied Don Quixote, 'but Chloë, which is without doubt the name of the lady of whom the author of these verses complains; and really he must have been a very ingenious poet, or else I know very little of the art.'—'Then your worship understands crambo?' said the squire. 'Better than you imagine,' answered the knight, 'as you will see when you carry from me a letter to my mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, written in verse from top to bottom; for thou must know, Sancho, that all, or the greatest part, of the knights-errant who lived in former ages, were very much addicted to poetry and musick; these two qualities, or rather gifts of nature, being annexed to all errants in love; though the truth is, their couplets were rather sprightly than elegant.'—'I wish your worship would read on,' said Sancho; 'perhaps you may find something more to our satisfaction.' Accordingly the knight having turned over the leaf, 'Here is prose,' said he; 'and seems to be a letter.' Sancho asking if it was upon business, his master replied, 'In the beginning there was nothing but love.'—'Pray, Sir,' cried Sancho, 'read it aloud, for I am highly delighted with matters of love.'—'With all my heart,' answered

* As it is impossible to preserve the original blunders of Sancho, who mistakes *Filo*, or *Phillis*, for *Hilo*, that signifies a thread, we are oblig'd to substitute another, by changing *Phillis* into *Chloë*, which Sancho, in English, might have as naturally mistaken for a clue; and by this expedient the sense of the passage is not hurt, and but very little altered.

answered Don Quixote ; who raising his voice, in compliance with the squire's request, read what follows.

'Thy false promises, together with the certainty of my misfortune, have exiled me to a corner of the world, from whence thou wilt hear an account of my death, before this my complaint shall reach thine ears. Thou hast cast me off, ungrateful as thou art, in favour of one who, though he is richer, is not a more deserving lover than me : for if virtue were the wealth that is most esteemed, I should have no cause to envy the happiness of others, or to bewail my own mishap. What thy beauty had raised, thy behaviour has overthrown : by the first I mistook thee for an angel, by the last I discovered thee to be a woman. Mayest thou live in peace, fair authoress of my misfortunes ; and Heaven grant that the deceit of thy husband may never be disclosed, that thou mayest never repent of what thou hast done, nor I enjoy the revenge I do not desire !'

Don Quixote having read this letter, observed, that nothing else could be inferred either from it, or the verses, but that the author was some despairing lover. Then perusing the rest of the book, he found more verses and letters, some legible, and others not intelligible ; but the substance of them all was composed of complaints, lamentations, suspicions, desires, disgusts, favours, and disdain, some of which were extolled, and others deplored.—While Don Quixote examined the book, Sancho rummaged the portmanteau, without leaving a corner in that or the pillion which he did not search, pry into, and overhaul ; no seam was left unripped, no lock of wool unpicked, that nothing might be lost through negligence and want of care ; so much was his cupidity awakened by finding the money, which amounted to more than a hundred crowns ; and though he reaped no fruit from his industry, he thought himself abundantly requited for his capers in the blanket, his vomit of the balsam, the benediction of the pack-staves, the fifty-cuffs of the carrier, the loss of his bags, the robbery of his great coat, with

with all all the hunger, thirst, and fatigue he had undergone in the service of his worthy master, who had made him more than amends by his generous present of this windfall.

The knight of the rueful countenance was impatient to know the owner of the portmanteau; conjecturing by the sonnet, the letter, the gold, and the fine linen, that he must be some lover of quality, whom the disdain and barbarity of his mistress had driven to some desperate end: but as, in that uninhabited and rocky place, there was nobody who could give him the information he wanted, he resolved to penetrate farther into the mountain, without taking any other road than what Rozinante should chuse for his own conveniency, still confident of meeting with some strange adventure among these briars and brambles.

As he went on, entertaining himself with these reflections, he perceived upon the top of a hill right before him, a man skipping from bush to bush, and rock to rock, with wonderful agility; his body seemed naked, his beard black and bushy, his hair long and matted, his feet unshod, his legs bare, and his thighs covered with breeches, which to all appearance were of crimson, but so ragged, that his skin appeared through many different holes, while his head was without any sort of covering. Notwithstanding the nimbleness with which he passed, all these minute circumstances were seen and remarked by the knight of the rueful countenance, who in vain attempted to follow him; those rough roads being quite unpassable by the feeble Rozinante, who was naturally phlegmatic and tender-footed. However, *Don Quixote* concluded that this must be the owner of the pillion and portmanteau, and determined within himself to find him out, although he should travel a whole year through the mountains for that very purpose. With this view he ordered Sancho to alight, and take a short cut over one part of the mountain, while he should go round the other; and by this expedient they might come up with the man who had so suddenly vanished from

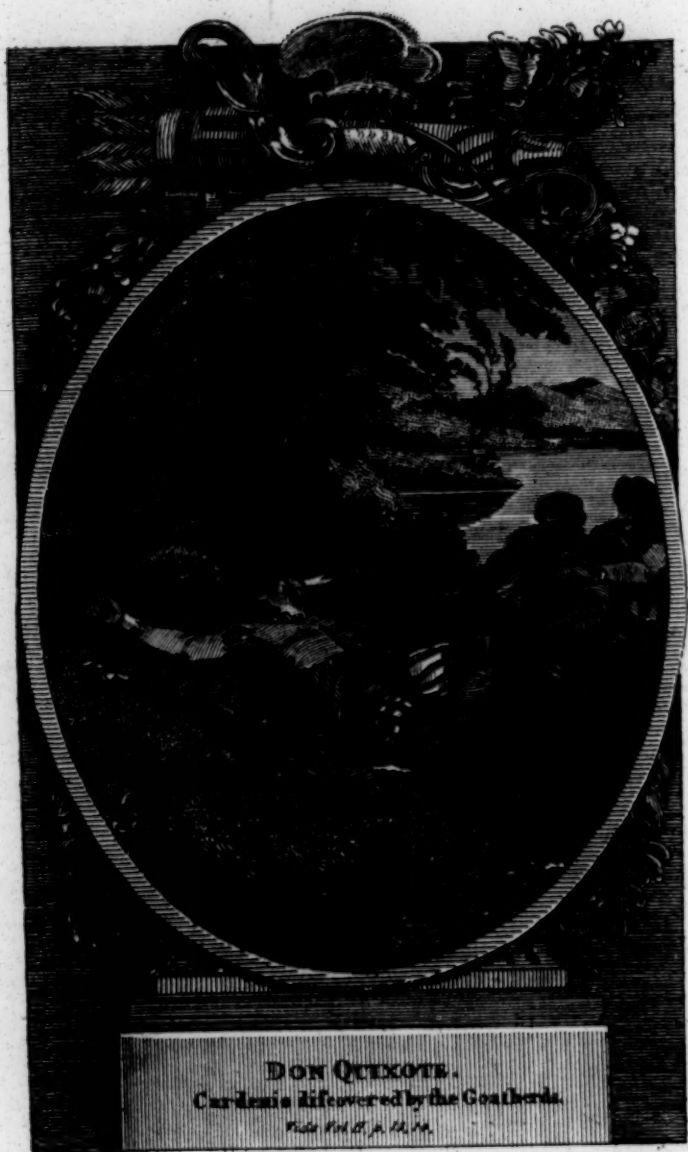
from their fight. 'That proposal I can by no means comply with,' answered the squire; 'for if I stir but an inch from your worship, fear instantly lays hold on me, and assaults me in a thousand horrid shapes and visions; and let this serve to apprise you, that henceforward, I will not budge a finger's breath from your presence.'—'Be it so,' said he of the rueful countenance: 'and I am very glad that thou canst avail thyself of my courage, which shall never fail thee, even if thy soul should fail thy body: follow me, therefore, step by step, or at thy own leisure, and use thine eyes like two spy-glasses; we will take a compass round this little mountain, and perhaps we may meet again with that man, who is certainly no other than the owner of what we found.' To this observation Sancho replied, 'Methinks we may save ourselves that trouble; for if, upon finding him, he should prove to be the owner of the money, I must of course make restitution; therefore we had better spare all this fruitless search; and keep it *bona fide*, until the true owner appear of himself, without all this intricate enquiry: and before that happens, perhaps I shall have spent the whole, and then I shall be discharged by law.'—'In that notion thou art mistaken, Sancho,' resumed the knight; 'for as we have already good grounds to believe he is the owner, it is our duty to find him out, and restore what we have taken; and though we should not find him, the strong reason we have to believe that it belongs to him will make us equally guilty in detaining it, as we should be if it really did. Wherefore, friend Sancho, do not give thyself any uneasiness about the enquiry; because if we find him, I shall be freed from a great deal of anxiety.' So saying, he put spurs to Rozinante, and Sancho followed him in his usual manner. Having surrounded part of the mountain, they found in a brook, that watered the foot of it, a dead mule saddled and bridled, and half consumed by the dogs and crows; another circumstance which confirmed them in the opinion, that he who fled
from

from them was master both of the mule and portmanteau.

While they were looking at this object, they heard a shepherd's whistle, and presently on the left appeared a good number of goats, and behind them, on the top of the mountain, they descried the goatherd, who seemed to be a man in years. Don Quixote calling aloud, entreated him to come down; and he, in the same tone, asked what had brought them to that place, which was seldom trodden, except by the feet of goats, wolves, and other wild beasts that harboured thereabouts? Sancho bade him come down, and they would tell him what had brought them thither; upon which the goatherd descended, and coming up to Don Quixote, 'I will wager,' said he, 'that you are looking at the hireling mule, which lies dead in that bottom, where in good sooth it hath lain full six months. Pray have you met with it's master?'—'We have met with nothing,' answered the knight, 'but a pillion and a portmanteau, which we found not far from hence.'—'I have often seen the same things,' replied the goatherd, 'but would never touch nor go near them, being afraid of some misfortune, or of being questioned for theft; for the devil is very cunning, and raises blocks under our feet, over which we stumble, and very often fall, without knowing how or wherefore?'—'That is the very thing I say,' answered Sancho: 'though I saw them also, I would not go within a stone's throw of them; there I left them, and there they remain as they were; for I don't chuse to steal a dog with a collar about his neck.*' 'Prythee, honest friend,' said Don Quixote, 'dost thou know who the owner of these things is?' 'All that I can say of the matter,' answered the goatherd, 'is, that it may be about six months, more or less, since there came to our
hut,

* Methinks it is inconsistent with the character of the knight, to allow Sancho to tell such a fraudulent untruth in his hearing; nor is Panza's behaviour on this occasion much for the honour of his simplicity.





DON QUIXOTE.
Cardenio life-woried by the Goatherds.

PLATE I. P. 12, 13.

hut, which is about three leagues from hence, a very genteel young man, of a comely appearance, riding upon that very mule that now lies dead, with the same pillion and portmanteau which you say you found. He asked what part of the mountain was the most woody and concealed ; and we told him, that it was this very spot where we now are ; and it is so ; for if you go half a league farther into the mountain, you will perhaps find it a very difficult matter to return : and I marvel much how you have got so far, for there is neither high road or by-path that leads to this place. But as I was saying, the young man hearing our reply, turned his mule, and rode towards the place to which we had directed him, leaving us all very much pleased with his appearance, though not a little surprized at his question, and the speed with which we saw him ride back into the heart of the mountain : from that time we saw no more of him, till a few days after ; when he sprung upon one of our shepherds on the road ; and, without saying why or wherefore, beat and bruised him unmercifully ; after which he went to the sumpter ass, and carrying off all the bread and cheese that was on his back, with surprising nimbleness, ran back again to the thicket. As soon as we understood this particular, several of us goatherds went in search of him, through the most wild and unfrequented part of the mountain, for the space of two days, at the end of which we found him lying in the hollow of a large cork-tree. He came out to us in a very civil manner, with his cloaths all torn, and his face so tanned and disfigured by the sun, that we should scarce have known him, had not his cloaths, tattered as they were, which we had before taken particular notice of, assured us that he was the person we went in search of. He saluted us very courteously, and in a few words, though very well chosen, bad us not wonder at seeing him in that condition ; for he was obliged in that manner to do penance which had been enjoined him on account of his manifold sins and transgressions. We earnestly begged to know who

he was ; but that he could never be prevailed upon to tell : we desired him also, whenever he should have occasion for food, without which he could not live, to tell us where we should find him, and we would bring it to him with great care and affection ; or if that was not to his liking, we desired him to ask it civilly, without taking it by force. He thanked us kindly for our tenders of service, begged pardon for the assaults he had committed, and promised for the future, to ask it for God's sake, without giving offence to any person whatsoever. With regard to the place of his habitation, he said he had no other than that which chance presented every night when it grew dark ; and concluded his discourse with such piteous lamentation, that our hearts must have been made of flint, if we could have heard it without shedding tears, considering the woeful change he had undergone since we saw him at first ; for as I have already observed, he was a genteel, comely youth ; and, by his courteous and polite discourse, shewed himself to be a person of good birth and excellent breeding ; and though we who heard him were only home-bred country people, the gentility of his carriage was easily perceived by our clownish ignorance. In the midst of this conversation that passed between him and us, he grew silent all of a sudden, and nailed, as it were, his eyes to the ground, for a considerable space of time, during which we remained in suspense and no small concern, to see the effect of this stupefaction ; for by his staring at the ground for a good while, without moving his eye-lids, then shutting them close and biting his lips, and then drawing up the skin of his forehead, we could easily perceive that he was seized with some fit of madness ; and he soon confirmed the truth of our opinion, for he sprung up with surprising force from the ground on which he had thrown himself, and attacked the person who was next to him with such rage and resolution, that if we had not taken him off, he would have beaten and bit him to death : crying aloud all the time, Ha, treacherous Fernando ! now shalt thou pay for

for the injury thou hast done me. These hands shall tear out thy heart, in which all kinds of wickedness, particularly fraud and deceit, are harboured and dwell!" To these he added other expressions, tending to reproach that Fernando with treachery and baleness. When we had got our friend out of his clutches, with no small trouble, he went off without speaking another word, and ran at full speed among these shrubs and brambles, so as that it was impossible for us to follow him. From these things we conjectured that his madness came upon him by fits, and that some person of the name of Fernando must have done him some deadly wrong, which hath driven him to distraction. Indeed, this conjecture has been since confirmed by his different behaviour on divers occasions, when he hath met with our shepherds, from whom he hath sometimes begged part of their provision, and at other times he hath taken it by force; for when the fit of lunacy is upon him, though they offer it of their own free will, he will not accept of it peaceably, without coming to blows; but when he is in his right senses, he begs it for God's sake, in a very courteous and civil manner, and returns many thanks for the favour, accompanied with abundance of tears. And truly, gentlemen,' added the goatherd, 'I and four more country lads, two of them my own servants, and the other two friends of mine, yesterday resolved to go in search of him, and, after having found him, to carry him either by force or fair means, to the city of Almodavar, which is about eight leagues from hence, and there have him cured, if he be curable; or learn of him, when he is in his senses, who he is, or whether or not he has any relations to whom we may give an account of his misfortune. This, gentlemen, is all I can say in answer to the questions you asked; and you may take it for granted, that the owner of the goods you found, is the very same person whom you saw skip about half naked with such agility:' for Don Quixote had said that they had seen a man in that condition, leaping from rock to rock.

The knight was very much surprized at this information of the goatherd, which making him still more impatient to know who this unfortunate lunatick was, he determined with himself to put his former design in execution, and go in quest of him through the whole mountain, without leaving a cave or corner unsearched until he should find him. But accident was more his friend on this occasion, than he could either imagine or expect; for at that instant, the young man of himself appeared in the cleft of a rock hard by the place where they stood; and came towards them, muttering something to himself, which they could not have understood had he been near, much less as he was at some distance from them. His equipage was just as it had been described; but, as he approached, Don Quixote perceived that his buff doublet, though torn to rags, still retained the perfume: from whence he concluded, that the person who wore such dress could not be a man of the lowest rank. When he came up, he saluted them very politely, though with a hoarse, mistuned voice; and the salutation was returned with no less courtesy by Don Quixote, who alighting from Rozinante, with genteel and graceful deportment, went, and embraced the stranger, whom he strained within his arms a good while, as if he had been a very old acquaintance. The other, who might have been called the tatterdemalion of the distracted, as Don Quixote was stiled the knight of the rueful countenance, after having submitted to this embrace, stepped back, and laying his hands on the shoulders of the knight, stood looking attentively in his face, in order to recollect him; no less astonished, perhaps, at the figure, mien, and armour of Don Quixote, than this last was surprized at his forlorn appearance. At length, the first who broke silence after the embrace was the ragged youth, who spoke what you may read in the following chapter.

CHAPTER X.

*The Continuation of the Adventure in the Sierra
Morena.*

THE history relates, that Don Quixote listened with vast attention to the shabby knight of the mountain, who began the conversation thus: 'Assuredly, Signior, though I have not the honour to know who you are, I thank you heartily for those expressions of kindness with which you treat me; and wish I were in such a situation as would enable me to repay this courteous reception with something more than mere good-will: but my hapless fortune affords me nothing to offer in return for the civilities that are shewn me, except a hearty inclination to make a more adequate satisfaction.'—'My will and desire,' answered Don Quixote, 'to serve you is so strong, that I was determined not to quit these mountains until I had found you, and learned of yourself whether or not the grief you manifest in this strange course of life, could be alleviated by any kind of remedy, for which, had need required, I would have searched with all possible diligence; and had your misfortune been such as shut up all the avenues to advice and redress, I was resolved to join your lamentations, and bemoan your misery to the utmost of my power: for, in all misfortunes, the greatest consolation is a sympathizing friend; and if this my friendly intention deserves the least return of civility, I entreat you, Signior, by that courtesy which I see you so eminently possess, and moreover conjure you by that object which of all others in this life you have most loved, or are most in love with, to tell me who you are, and inform me of the cause that brings you to live and die in this solitude, like the brute beasts among which you dwell, so different from that rank and situation to which your appearance and person declare you are entitled. And I swear by the order of chivalry which I have received, unworthy sinner that I am! and by the profession of a knight-errant, that if you comply with this my request, I will serve you with that

earnestness which my duty obliges me to express, either in remedying your mishap, if it admits of remedy, or in condoling with you, as I have already promised.' The knight of the wood, hearing him of the rueful countenance talk in this manner, could do nothing for some time but gaze, and stare, and survey him from head to foot; at length, having examined him thoroughly, he said, 'If you have got any food, for God's sake spare me a little; and after I shall have eaten it, I will do as you desire, in return for the civility you now shew me.'

Sancho immediately pulled from his bag, and the goatherd from his scrip, some victuals to appease the hunger of the tatterdemalion, who swallowed what they gave him like a frantic person, with such hurry, that he left not the interval of an instant between one mouthful and another, but seemed to devour rather than eat, without either speaking or being spoken to by the spectators. His repast being ended, he beckoned them to follow, and conducted them to a verdant spot of grass, at the turning of a rock, a little way from the place where they were; and sitting down on the green turf, they followed his example; not a word being spoke all the time, until the ragged knight, after having adjusted himself in his seat, began in this manner. 'If you desire, gentlemen, that I should, in a few words, inform you of the immensity of my misfortunes, you must give me your promise that you will not by any question, or otherwise, interrupt the thread of my doleful story; for if you should, that instant I will break off the narration.' This warning recalled to the knight's memory the story recounted by his squire, which still remained unfinished, because he had not kept an exact account of the goats, as they passed the river. But to return to the tattered knight: 'I give you this precaution,' added he, 'because I would briefly pass over the detail of my misfortunes, the remembrance of which brings fresh addition to my woe; and the fewer questions you ask, the sooner shall I have finished the relation; although, in order to satisfy
your

your curiosity to the full, I will not fail to mention every material circumstance.' Don Quixote promised, in behalf of himself and the company, to avoid all manner of interruption; and the stranger thus assured, began in these words:

'My name is Cardenio; the place of my nativity one of the best cities in this province of Andalusia; my family noble, my parents rich, and my misfortunes so great, that no doubt they have been lamented by them, and even felt through my whole kindred, though all their wealth would not alleviate my woe; for the goods of fortune are but of little service against those ills inflicted by the hand of Heaven. In the same country lived, shall I call her a paradise, which love had adorned with all the charms I could desire to possess? Such was the beauty of Lucinda, a young lady as well born and rich as I; though more fortunate, and endowed with less constancy than what was due to my honourable intentions. This Lucinda did I admire, love and adore, even from my most tender years; and she made me all the returns of love and inclination that I could expect from her infant age. Our parents were not ignorant of our mutual affection, which gave them no offence, because they foresaw that if it should increase with our years, it could have no other issue than marriage; an union which the equality of our age and fortune seemed to point out. Meanwhile, our passion growing up with our age, Lucinda's father thought himself obliged to forbid me his house, imitating, in that particular, the parents of Thisbe, whom the poets have celebrated so much. This prohibition added flame to flame, and wish to wish; for though our tongues were restrained, they could not silence our pens, which commonly express the sentiments of the heart with more liberty, because the presence of the beloved object often confounds the most determined intention, and puts to silence the most undaunted tongue.

'Good Heaven! what letters did I write! what chaste endearing answers did I receive! what songs did

did I compose, inspired by love, that displayed the soul unmasked, inflamed each soft desire, regaled the fancy, and indulged the wish ! in fine, my patience being exhausted, and my heart almost consumed with the desire of seeing her, I resolved to execute the scheme which seemed most favourable for my love and pretensions ; and this I put in practice, by demanding her in marriage of her father, who thanked me for the honour I intended him, by this proposal of marrying into his family ; but said, as my own father was alive, it was properly his business to make the demand ; for, unless his consent and inclination were obtained, Lucinda was not a person either to be given or taken in marriage by stealth. I thanked him in my turn, for his politeness ; and thinking there was a great deal of reason in what he said, assured myself that my father would readily agree to the proposal whenever I should make it. I therefore flew instantly to disclose my sentiments to him on that subject ; and entering the closet where he was, found him reading a letter, which, before I could speak a syllable, he put into my hands, saying, " By this letter, Cardenio, you will see how much Duke Ricardo is inclined to do you service." This Duke Ricardo, as you must know, gentlemen, is a grandee of Spain, whose estate lies in the best part of this province. I took and read this letter, which was so extremely kind, that I myself should have blamed my father, had he refused to comply with what he requested in it : this was to send me immediately to his house, he being desirous that I should live as the companion, not the servant, of his eldest son : and he would take care of my fortune in such a manner as should manifest the esteem he had for me. Having read the letter, I was struck dumb at knowing the contents ; especially when I heard my father pronounce, " Two days hence, Cardenio, you shall set out, according to the pleasure of the Duke ; and you ought to thank God for having opened an avenue, through which you may arrive at that fortune I know you deserve." To this declaration he added

added other services, as became a prudent father ; and I, the night before I departed, finding means to speak with Lucinda, told her what had happened : nay, I even imparted it to her father, entreating him to wait a few days, without disposing of her to any other, until I should know in what manner Ricardo wanted to employ me. He gave me his promise accordingly, and she confirmed it by a thousand vows and anxious sighs.

‘ I at length arrived at the seat of Duke Ricardo, by whom I was so well received and kindly entertained, that Envy presently began to do her office, possessing the old servants with the opinion, that every expression of favour I received from the duke was prejudicial to their interest. But he who was most rejoiced at my residing there, was the duke’s second son, Fernando, a gay, genteel, liberal, and amorous youth, who in a short time was pleased to honour me with such intimacy of friendship as became the subject of every body’s discourse ; and though the eldest brother loved and favoured me also, he did not carry his favour and affection to such a pitch. Now, as all secrets are communicated between friends, and the confidence in which I lived with Fernando was soon changed into friendship, he imparted to me his most secret thoughts, and, among other things, a love affair that gave him a good deal of disquiet. In short, he had an inclination for a country maid, who was his father’s vassal : her parents were very rich ; and she herself so beautiful, reserved, modest, and discreet, that nobody who knew her could determine in which of these qualifications she most excelled. These accomplishments of this fair maiden inflamed the desires of Don Fernando to such a pitch, that he resolved, as the easiest conquest over her virtue, to promise he would marry her ; for he found it impossible to gratify his wish in any other way. I, prompted and bound by my friendship, endeavoured to dissuade and divert him from his purpose, by the strongest arguments and most lively examples I could produce ; but finding
them

them all ineffectual, I resolved to communicate the whole affair to his father Duke Ricardo.

‘Don Fernando having abundance of cunning and discernment, suspected my intention ; and was afraid, that the obligation he saw I was under, as a faithful servant, would not allow me to conceal an affair so prejudicial to the honour of the duke my master ; he therefore, in order to divert and deceive me, observed that he could find no better remedy to remove the beauty that enslaved him from his remembrance, than that of absence for a few months ; and therefore desired that we should go to my father’s house, upon pretence, as he would tell the duke, of seeing and purchasing some fine horses in our town, which produces the best in the world. Scarce had he uttered this proposal, when, prompted by my love, exclusive of his prudent intention, I approved of it, as one of the best concerted schemes that could be imagined ; and was rejoicing at meeting with such a fair conjecture and occasion of returning to my dear Lucinda. Induced by this motive and desire, I applauded his pretence, and enforced his proposal, advising him to execute his plan with all speed ; for absence would certainly do it’s office, in spite of the most established inclination. At that very time, as I afterwards understood, he had enjoyed the country maid, under the title of her husband, and waited for an opportunity of owning it with safety to himself, being afraid of the duke’s resentment, in case he should discover his folly. It happened afterwards, that as love in young people is, for the most part, nothing but appetite, whose only aim is pleasure, and this being enjoyed, what seemed love vanishes, because it cannot exceed the bounds of nature ; whereas real love is bounded by no such limits : I say, as soon as Don Fernando enjoyed the country girl, his desires were appeased, and his raptures abated ; and if at first he pretended to seek a cure for them in absence, he now earnestly desired to be absent, that he might avoid any farther gratification.

‘The

* The duke having given him leave, and ordered me to attend him, we arrived at our habitation, where he was received by my father in a manner suitable to his rank and family. I went instantly to visit Lucinda, whose presence in a moment re-kindled all my desires, which indeed were neither dead or decayed within me: and, to my infinite misfortune, I made Don Fernando acquainted with my love, because I thought, by the laws of that intimate friendship with which he honoured me, I ought to conceal nothing from him. I therefore praised the beauty, grace, and discretion of Lucinda, in such a manner, as excited his curiosity to see such an accomplished young lady. Prompted by my evil genius, I gratified his desire, shewing her to him one night by the light of a taper at the window from which I used to converse with her. At sight of her he absolutely forgot all the beauties he had formerly seen; he was struck dumb with wonder; he seemed to lose all sense, became absent and pensive: and, in short, enamoured of her to that degree, which you will perceive in the course of my unhappy story: and the more to inflame his desire, which he concealed from me, and disclosed to Heaven alone, he happened one day to find a letter which she had written, desiring me to ask her in marriage of her father, so prudent, modest, and tender, that, upon perusing it, he said, "In Lucinda alone are concentrated all the charms of beauty and understanding, which are divided among the rest of her sex." True it is, and I will now confess it; and although I knew how justly Fernando applauded Lucinda, I was vexed at hearing these praises proceed from his mouth, and began to dread and suspect his inclination: for he was eternally talking of her, and always turned the discourse upon her, even when he was obliged to bring her in by the head and shoulders; a circumstance that waked a sort of jealousy within me: not that I imagined aught could alter the faith and affection of Lucinda; yet, notwithstanding, my destiny made me dread the very thing that confidence insured. Don Fernando

nando always contrived means to read the letters I sent to Lucinda, together with her answers, on pretence of being highly pleased with the good sense they contained; and it once happened, that she having desired me to send her a book of knight-errantry, in which she took great delight, called *Amadis de Gaul*.

Don Quixote no sooner heard him mention this book, than he said, 'Had you told me in the beginning of your story, that your mistress Lucinda was an admirer of books of chivalry, you would have had no occasion to use any other argument to convince me of her sublime understanding; which I should not have deemed quite so extraordinary as you have represented it, had she wanted relish for that sort of reading; wherefore you need not spend any more words with me, in extolling her beauty, virtue, and good sense; for, upon the knowledge of her taste only, I pronounce her to be the most beautiful and discreet lady in the universe. I wish, however, that you had sent along with *Amadis de Gaul*, the worthy Don Rugel of Greece; for I know your mistress Lucinda would have been greatly pleased with *Darayra* and *Garayra*, together with the judicious sayings of the shepherd *Darinel*, and those admirable verses of his eclogues, sung and represented by him with such grace, spirit and discretion; but the time will come when that omission may be rectified: indeed, the fault may be repaired as soon as you shall please to accompany me to the place of my habitation, where I can supply you with more than three hundred books, which are the feast of my soul, and entertainment of my life; though now I recollect, not one of them remains in my possession; thanks to the malice of wicked and envious inchanters. But I hope you will be so good as to forgive me for having contradicted my promise of not interrupting your story; for when the subject turns upon chivalry or knight-errant, I can no more forbear interposing, than the rays of the sun can cease to warm, or those of the moon to wet: but I ask pardon; pray proceed with
your

your story ; for that is the most to the purpose at present.'

While Don Quixote was talking in this manner, Cardenio hung his head, and fell into a profound reverie ; and though the knight repeated his request, would neither lift up his head, nor answer one word. At length, after a long pause, looking up, ' You cannot,' said he, ' beat it out of my thoughts ; nor is there any person upon earth, who can persuade me to the contrary ; and he must be a blockhead who imagines or believes otherwise, than that the villain Master Elisabat carried on a criminal correspondence with Queen Madasima.'—' By Heaven, 'tis false,' cried Don Quixote, with great indignation and impetuosity, as usual : ' that report is the effect of malice, or rather mere wantonness. Queen Madasima was a most royal dame, and it is not to be presumed that a princess of her rank would confer favours upon a mere quack doctor. Whoever thinks otherwise, lies like a very great scoundrel ; and I will prove him such either on horseback or a foot, armed or disarmed, by night or by day, as will most suit his inclination.' Cardenio stood all the while looking attentively at him, and being by this time seized with the paroxysm of his madness, could not proceed with his story ; neither, if he had proceeded, would Don Quixote have listened to it, for he was offended at what he had heard to the prejudice of Queen Madasima,* whose reputation interested him as much as if she had been actually his own mistress : such wonderful impression had those profane books made on his imagination !

I say, then Cardenio being by this time under the influence of his distraction, and hearing himself called liar and scoundrel, with other terms of reproach, could not relish the joke ; but, snatching up a large pebble that lay near him, aimed it so successfully at

VOL. II.

C

Don

* Queen Madasima, a lady in Amadis de Gaul, attended by one Elisabat, a surgeon, with whom she travels, and lies in woods and deserts.

Don Quixote's breast, that he fell fairly on his back with the blow. Sancho Panza, seeing his master treated in this manner, attacked the madman with his clenched fist; but the lunatick received him with such a blow, as knocked him down to the ground at once, and then getting upon him, mauled his carcase to his heart's content; while the goatherd, who attempted to defend him, met with the same fate. Having thus mastered and pummelled them all round, he left off, and with great composure retreated to the thickets from whence he came. Sancho then arose; and, enraged to find himself handled in this manner for nothing, ran to take vengeance of the goatherd, saying that he was to blame for the whole, because he had not informed him, that the man had intervals of madness; which had they known, they might have guarded against them. The goatherd affirmed, that he had apprized them of what might happen; and if they had not heard him, it was no fault of his. The squire replied; the goatherd retorted; and, in conclusion, they went by the ears together, and pulled each other's beards with such fury, that there would not have been a single hair left on either chin, had not Don Quixote interposed. Sancho, grappling stoutly with his adversary, cried, 'Give me leave, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance; this is no armed knight, but a plebeian like myself, of whom I can securely take satisfaction for the injury he has done me, by fighting with him hand to hand, like a man of honour.'—'True, said Don Quixote; but the cause of what hath happened cannot be justly imputed to him.' Peace accordingly ensued; and the knight asked the goatherd again, if there was a possibility of finding Cardenio; for he was extremely desirous of hearing the conclusion of his story. The goatherd repeated what he had said before, that he did not certainly know whereabout he resided; but if they should stay long in these parts, they could not fail of finding him either mad or sober.

CHAPTER XI.

Of the strange Adventures that happened to the valiant Knight of La Mancha in the Sierra Morena, where he did Penance, in Imitation of Beltenbros.

DON Quixote, having taken leave of the goat-herd, and mounted Rozinante again, commanded Sancho to follow him; and the squire, bestriding his ass, obeyed with great reluctance. As they advanced at leisure, into the most rocky part of the mountain, Sancho longed to death for an opportunity of talking, and waited impatiently till his master should begin, that he might not transgress his orders, but, being utterly unable to keep silence any longer 'Sir Don Quixote,' said he, 'be pleased to give me your blessing, and grant me leave to return immediately to my wife and children, with whom, at least, I can talk and prattle my fill; for in commanding me to travel with you, through these deserts, night and day, without opening my lips when I am disposed to speak, your worship buries me alive: if it were the will of Heaven, that beasts spoke as they did in the days of Hyflop, I should be less uneasy, because I would converse with my ass at pleasure, and that would be some comfort to me in my misfortunes; but it is a very hard case, and what I cannot bear with patience, to travel in search of adventures all my life, and find naught but rib-roastings, blanketings, robberies, and fifty-cuffs; and, after all, be obliged to sew up our mouths, without daring to bring up what lies upon our stomachs, more than if we were dumb.'

'I understand thee, Sancho,' replied the knight; 'thou art impatient until I take off the interdiction I have laid upon thy tongue. I take it off, then; say what you please, on condition that this repeal shall last no longer than our stay in this mountain.'—'Be it so,' said Sancho; 'to-day I will speak, to-morrow God's will be done; and the first use I make of this safe conduct, is to ask why your worship was in such a passion about the Queen Magimala, or how d'ye call her; or of what signification

was it to you, whether that same Abat was her sweetheart or not? Had your worship overlooked that circumstance, that you had no concern in, I firmly believe the madman would have gone on with his story, and you would have saved yourself the pebble-shot, with more than half a dozen kicks and cuffs.'

'In faith, Sancho,' answered Don Quixote, 'if thou knewest, as I do, what an honourable and princely lady that Queen Madafima was, thou wouldst say, I had great patience in forbearing to demolish the mouth from whence such blasphemy proceeded; for sure, 'tis no less to say, or even think, that a queen should take a surgeon to her bed. The truth of the story is, that Master Elisabat, whom the lunatick mentioned, was a man of prudence and discernment, and served the queen in quality of tutor and physician; but to suppose that there was any indecent familiarities between them, is a piece of folly that deserves to be severely chastised: and to convince thee that Cardenio knew not what he said, thou mayest remember he was deprived of his senses, when he took notice of that circumstance.'—'This I'll venture to say,' replied the squire, 'that the words of a madman are not to be minded; for, if fortune had not stood your worship's friend, and directed to your breast the pebble that was aimed at your head, we should have been in a fine condition, for your having quarrelled about that lady, whom Heaven confound! you may depend upon it, Cardenio would have been acquitted on account of his madness.'

'Every knight-errant,' said Don Quixote, 'is obliged to quarrel with those who are out of their senses, as well as those who are in them, if they asperse the honour of women, whatsoever they might be. How much more, then, in behalf of princesses of such high quality and accomplishments as adorned Queen Madafima, for whom I have a particular affection, on account of her admirable qualifications; for, over and above her beauty, she had a great share of prudence and resignation in her calamities, which were manifold: and the advice and company of Master Elisabat were of great service in encouraging

raging her to bear her afflictions with patience and equanimity. From hence, the ignorant and malicious vulgar took occasion to say and suppose, that she admitted of his careffes; but they lye. I say again, all those who either say or think so, lye in their throats, and I will tell them so two hundred times over.—‘As for my own part,’ said Sancho, ‘I neither say nor think any such thing; those that do may dine upon it: if they were too familiar, by this time they have answered for it to God. I prune my own vine, and know nothing about thine. I never meddle with other people’s concerns. He that buys and denies, his own purse belyes,’ as the saying is. Bare I was born; and bare I remain; and if I lose nothing, as little I gain. If he did lie with her, that is no matter of mine. Many people hunt the hare without ever finding the scut; for, Till you hedge in the sky, the starlings will fly. And evil tongues will not refrain from God himself.’

‘Good Heaven,’ cried Don Quixote, ‘what fooleries art thou stringing together, Sancho? Pray, what relation have these old saws to the subject of our conversation? I charge thee to hold thy peace, and henceforth entertain thyself with spurring up thy ass, and leave off talking of things which do not concern thee: or let thy whole five senses be convinced, that every thing I have done, am doing, or will do, is highly reasonable, and in exact conformity with the laws of chivalry, which I understand better than any knight that ever professed the order.’ ‘Yes, Sir’ replied Sancho, ‘to be sure it is an excellent law of chivalry, to stroll about bewildered in these mountains, where there is neither high road nor bye path, in search of a madman, who, after we have found him, will perhaps take it in his head to finish what he left undone; not of his story, but of your worship’s pate and my ribs, which he may chance to break in a thousand shivers.’

‘I say again, Sancho,’ resumed the knight, ‘hold thy peace? for I would have thee know, that I am not detained in this place, so much by the desire of finding the lunatick, as of performing in it an exploit

exploit by which I shall acquire everlasting renown throughout the whole knowing world; and put the stamp of perfection upon the wonderful efforts of knight-errantry?'—'And will this exploit be attended with much danger?' said Sancho. 'No,' answered he of the rueful countenance; 'though the dice may run so as to produce bad instead of good fortune; but the whole will depend upon thy diligence.'—'Upon my diligence!' cried the squire. 'Without doubt,' answered his master; 'for, if thou wilt return speedily, from the place to which thou must be sent, my affliction will soon be at an end, and my glory will speedily begin: and, that I may no longer keep thee in suspense about the meaning of my words, know, Sancho, that the celebrated Amadis de Gaul was one of the most perfect knights-errant: one of them, said I? he alone was the only, single, chief, and superior of all his contemporaries. Contempt and shame upon Bellianis, and all those who say he equalled him in any one particular; for, by this light, they are all egregiously deceived! I say, moreover, when a painter desires to become famous in his art, he endeavours to imitate the originals painted by the most noted artists; and the same maxim holds in every other science and exercise that adorns a commonwealth: therefore, he who wants to attain the virtues of prudence and equanimity, must endeavour to imitate the character of Ulysses, in whose person and sufferings Homer has drawn an excellent picture of wisdom and patience, as Virgil, in the person of Æneas represents the piety of an affectionate son, and the sagacity of a wise and valiant general: not that they are described and set forth exactly as they were, but as they ought to have been, as examples of virtue to posterity. In the same manner, Amadis shonelikethenorth-star, the Lucifer and sun of all valiant and amorous knights; and therefore must be imitated as a pattern by all those who serve under the banners of love and chivalry. Now, this being the case, friend Sancho, I find that the knight-errant who approaches the nearest to this great original, will bid fairest for
attaining

attaining the perfection of chivalry and one of the circumstances in which that knight gave the highest proof of his worth, prudence, valour, patience, constancy, and love, was his retiring to the poor rock, when he was in disgrace with his mistress Oriana, there to do penance under the feigned name Beltenebros*; an appellation certainly very significant and proper to the way of life he had voluntarily chosen. As it is therefore more easy for me to imitate him in this than in cleaving giants, beheading serpents, slaying dragons, overthrowing armies, scattering navies, and dissolving enchantments, and as this solitude is so well adapted to such designs, I am resolved to seize occasion by the forelock, which she now so complaisantly presents.

‘In reality,’ said Sancho, ‘what is your worship resolved to do in this remote place?’—‘Have I not already told thee,’ replied the knight, ‘that I am determined to imitate Amadis, in acting the desperado, the lunatick, the madman? to copy also after the valiant Don Roldon, when he discovered, in a fountain, certain marks by which he was convinced that Angelica the Fair had committed uncleanness with Modero. A piece of information attended with such grief and anxiety, that he ran mad, tore up the trees by the root, sullied the waters of the transparent springs, slew shepherds, destroyed flocks, set fire to cottages, demolished houses, dragged mares along the ground, and performed a thousand other insolent feats worthy to be inserted in Fame’s eternal record: and because I do not propose to imitate Roldan, or Orlando, or Rotolando, for he went by all these names, literally in all the extravagancies he thought, said, and did, I will copy his outlines as well as I can, in the most essential parts of his character; nay, perhaps, I may content myself with the sole imitation of Amadis, who, by his tears and sighs alone, acquired as much fame as the other with all the mischief he did.’—‘If I apprehend the matter aright,’ said Sancho, the

* The Beautiful Obscure.

‘ the knights who played such mad pranks were provoked, and had some reason to act these fooleries and penance : but what cause hath your worship to turn madman ? With what lady are you in disgrace ? or by what signs are you given to understand that the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso has been playing the rogue either with Moor or Christian !—’ This is the point,’ answered Don Quixote, ‘ and refinement of my design ; a knight who turns madman, because he cannot help it, can claim no merit from his misfortune ; but the great matter is to run distracted without cause, and give my lady reason to conceive what I could do were I moistened, when I can do so much being dry. More especially, as I have sufficient cause in the long absence to which I am doomed by my ever darling mistress Dulcinea del Toboso ; for, according to the words of the shepherd Matias Ambrosio, which thou mayest have heard,

“ In absence of my charming fair,

“ I suffer all those ills I fear.”

Wherefore, friend Sancho, you need not throw away your time unprofitably, in advising me to refrain from an imitation at once so admirable, rare, and happy : mad I am, and mad I shall be, until thou returnest with the answer of a letter which I propose to send by thee to my Lady Dulcinea ; and if it be such as I am entitled to by my love and fidelity, my distraction and penance will end ; but, should it be otherwise, I shall run mad in earnest, and consequently be insensible of my misfortune : wherefore, let her answer be as it may, it will extricate me from the doubts and affliction in which thou leavest me ; because, if it be favourable, I shall enjoy it in my right senses ; and if it be unfavourable, my frenzy will not feel it.

‘ But tell me, Sancho, hast thou taken care of Mambrino’s helmet, which I saw thee take up, after that ungrateful vagabond endeavoured in vain to break it in pieces ; a circumstance that proves the excellency of its temper ?’ To this exclamation, Sancho replied, ‘ Fore God ! Sir Knight of the Rueful

Rueful Countenance, I cannot suffer, nor bear with patience, some things which your worship says; for they make me imagine, that all you have mentioned about chivalry, and acquiring kingdoms and empires, and giving away islands, with other favours and presents, according to the practice of knights-errant, is nothing but puffs of falshood, and the mere effect of piction or fiction, or what do you call it? for who that hears your worship call a barber's bason the helmet of Mambrino, and sees you continue in that error so many days, but will believe, that he who affirms such nonsense must be very much crazed in his understanding? The bason, which is all bruised and battered, I have put up in my bag, in order to be mended at home, and used for the service of my own beard, if ever, by the grace of God, I come to see my wife and family.'—'Hark ye, Sancho,' said Don Quixote, 'by the same oath you swore, I swear again, that thou hast the most slender understanding that any squire in this world does or ever did possess! Is it possible, that, after all thy travelling in my company, thou art not convinced that every thing belonging to knights-errant, appears chimera, folly, and distraction, being metamorphosed into the reverse of what it is, by the power of a tribe of inchanters who attend us, changing, converting, and restoring each particular, according to their pleasure, and the inclination they have to favour or annoy us: for which reason, what seems a barber's bason to thee, I can easily discern to be the helmet of Mambrino; and perhaps to a third it will assume a quite different appearance; and I cannot but admire the providence of the sage who is my friend, in making that which is really and truly Mambrino's helmet, appear a bason to the rest of mankind; because it is of such inestimable value, that if it was known, the whole world would combine to ravish it from me; but as it appears to them no more than a barber's bason, they never attempt to obtain it. This was plainly the case with the villain, who, having endeavoured to break it in pieces, left it on the ground, when he went off; whereas

whereas, had he known what it was, in good faith he would not have quitted it so easily. Keep it therefore with care, my friend, for at present there is no occasion for it; on the contrary, I shall strip off all my armour, and remain naked as I was born, in case I be inclined to imitate the penance of Roldan, rather than that of Amadis.

Conversing in this manner, they arrived at the foot of a high mountain that stood alone, as if it had been cut out from the rest that surrounded it. A gentle rill murmured by the skirts of it, winding along a meadow, so green and fertile, that it ravished the spectator's eye; while a number of forest trees that grew around, together with some delicious herbs and flowers, conspired to make the place enchanting. This was the scene in which the knight of the rueful countenance chose to do penance; and therefore he no sooner perceived it, than he began to exclaim aloud, as if he had actually lost his senses, 'This is the spot, ye heavens! which I chuse and appoint my residence, while I bewail that misfortune to which you yourselves have reduced me. This is the place where the tears from these eyes will increase the waters of that little brook; and where my profound and uninterrupted sighs will incessantly move the leaves of these mountain-oaks, in witness and testimony of the pangs which my tormented heart endures. O, ye rural deities, whosoever ye are, who take up your mansion in this uninhabited place, give ear to the complaints of an unhappy lover, whom a tedious absence and imaginary doubts have brought to lament among these craggy hills, and bemoan the cruel disposition of that ungrateful fair, who is the end and perfection of all human beauty! O, ye nymphs and dryads, who were wont to inhabit the hills and groves, (so may no nimble and lascivious satyrs, by whom you are beloved, though loved in vain, disturb your sweet repose,) help me to bewail my mishap: or at least disdain not to hear my moan!—O, Dulcinea del Toboso! light of my darkness! glory of my affliction! north-star of my inclinations!

inclinations! and planet of my fortune! as Heaven shall pour upon you the blessings which you ask; consider the place and condition to which your absence hath exiled me, and put such a period to my woe, as my fidelity shall seem to deserve! O, ye solitary trees, who henceforth are to bear me company in this retreat, convince me, by the gentle waving of your boughs, that my presence gives you no disgust.—And thou, my squire, the agreeable companion of my good and evil fortune, faithfully retain in thy remembrance what thou shalt see me do, that thou mayest recount and rehearse every circumstance to the lovely cause of all my distraction!’ So saying, he alighted; and, taking off the bridle and saddle from Rozinante, gave him a slap on the buttocks, pronouncing these words: ‘He who is a slave himself, bestows freedom upon thee. O steed, as excellent in thy qualities as unlucky in thy fate! go wheresoever thou wilt: thou bearest engraven on thy forehead, that thou wast never equalled in swiftness, either by Astolpho’s Hypogriff, or the renowned Frontino, that cost Bradamante so dear.’

Sancho, hearing this apostrophe, ‘My blessing,’ cried he, ‘be upon him whose industry now saves us the trouble of taking the halter from the head of Dapple*, who in good faith, should not want slaps on the buttocks, nor abundance of fine things said in his praise; but if he was here, I would not consent to his being turned loose, there being no reason for so doing; for he was never acquainted with love and despair, no more than I, who was his master, while it pleased God I should be so: and truly, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, if this departure of mine, and distraction of your worship, are really to take place, you had better saddle Rozinante again, to supply the want of Dapple; by which means a great deal of time will be saved in my going and coming; whereas, if I make the journey on foot, I know not when it will be performed; for, in short, I am a very sorry walker’—

‘I say,

* Lo! Sancho’s ass hath disappeared again.

‘I say, be it so then, Sancho,’ answered Don Quixote; ‘I approve of thy proposal; and assure thee, that thou shalt set out in three days, during which I would have thee take notice of what I shall do for her sake, that thou mayest be able to give her a full account of my behaviour.’—‘What more can I see,’ said Sancho, ‘than I have seen already?’—‘You are pretty perfect in your story,’ answered the knight; ‘but, as yet, I have not torn my cloaths, scattered my armour, and dashed my head against the rocks, nor performed many other things of this sort, which thou wilt behold with admiration!’—‘For the love of God, Sir,’ cried Sancho, ‘take care how you dash your head against the rocks; for you may chance to meet with such a one as will, at the first push, put the finishing stroke to this whole scheme of penance; and I should think, that as knocks in the head are absolutely necessary to compleat the work, your worship might content yourself, seeing the whole affair is a sham, a counterfeit, and a joke; I say your worship might content yourself with ramming your skull against water, or some soft thing, like a cotton bag; and leave it to my care to tell my lady, that your worship went to loggerheads with the point of a rock a thousand times harder than adamant.’—‘Friend Sancho,’ replied the knight, ‘I am obliged to thee for thy kind intention; but, thou must know, that what I do is not a sham, but a very serious matter; for, to behave otherwise, were to transgress the orders of chivalry, which forbid us to lye, under pain of being degraded; and you know, that to substitute one thing instead of another, is downright telling a lye: wherefore, my knocks on the head must be real, hard, and effectual, and not sophisticated or imaginary; and it will be necessary to leave me some lint for my wounds, since it was the will of fate that we should lose the balsam.’

‘It was a much greater misfortune,’ said the squire, ‘to lose the ass, and with him the lint and all; but I beseech your worship not to talk of that accursed drench, the sole mention of which not
only

only turns my stomach, but even my very soul : and I beseech you, moreover, to suppose we have passed those three days, which you have appointed for shewing me your mad pranks ; for I take them all for granted, and will tell wonders of them to my lady. Write the letter, therefore, and dispatch me forthwith : because I am impatient till I return and deliver your worship from that purgatory in which I leave you.—‘ Purgatory ! call you it, Sancho ? ’ replied Don Quixote : ‘ it rather deserves the name of hell, or something worse, if worse can be. ’—‘ I have heard,’ said the squire, ‘ that from hell there is no retention. ’—‘ I know not,’ replied the knight, ‘ what you mean by retention. ’—‘ Retention,’ answered Sancho, ‘ signifies, that whosoever goeth to hell, neither will nor can come back again. The contrary of which shall happen to your worship, or my feet will misgive me, provided I carry spurs to quicken Rozinante : and set me once face to face before my Lady Dulcinea, at Toboso, I will tell her such stories of the folly and madness, for they are both the same thing, which your worship has committed, and will then be committing, that though I should find her harder than a cork-tree, I will make her as pliant as a glove ; and, with her sweet and honied answer, return through the air, like a witch, and deliver your worship from this purgatory, that appears like hell, though it be not really so, because there are some hopes of getting out of it ; whereas those who are actually in hell can have no such expectation ; and I dare say, your worship will not advance any thing to the contrary. ’

‘ That is all very true,’ said he of the rueful countenance ; ‘ but how shall we make shift to write this letter ? ’—‘ Ave, and the bill for the colts ? ’ added Sancho. ‘ That shall be inserted in the letter,’ answered his master ; ‘ and I think, as there is no paper to be had in this place, the best thing we can do, will be to write in the manner of the ancients, on the leaf of a tree, or on waxen tables ; though, I believe, those will be as difficult to be found as the paper. But now I remember what will do well,

and excellently well, for our purpose : I will write it in the pocket-book which belonged to Cardenio, and thou shalt take care to have it fairly transcribed in the first place where thou canst find a school-master or a parish-clerk to copy it. But by no means employ a scrivener, who may write it in such an unintelligible court-hand, that Satan himself could not understand it.'—'But what is to be done about the signing of it?' said Sancho. 'Love-letters are never signed,' replied Don Quixote. 'True,' resumed the squire; 'but all bills must be subscribed: and if this of yours were to be copied, they would say the subscription was counterfeit, and I might go whistle for my colts.'—'The bill shall be subscribed with my own hand in the pocket-book; which my niece shall no sooner see, than she will comply with the order, without any farther objection: and with regard to the letter, instead of my subscription, thou shalt cause to be inserted, "Yours, till death; the Knight of the Rueful Countenance." And though it be written by another hand, it is of small importance, because, now I remember, Dulcinea can neither read or write, nor ever set eyes on any writing or letter of mine: for our mutual love has been altogether platonick; without extending farther than a modest glance; and even that so seldom, that I can safely swear, in twelve years, during which I have loved her more than the light of these eyes, which will one day be closed in dust, I have not seen her more than four times; and even in these four times, perhaps, she hath not perceived me looking at her more than once. Such is the restraint and reserve in which her father Lorenzo Corchuelo, and her brother Aldonzo Nogales, have brought her up.'

'Ah, ha!' cried Sancho, 'is the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo, whose other name is Aldonza Lorenza, the same with the Lady Dulcinea?'—'Yes,' answered the knight; 'and she deserves to be lady of the whole universe.'—'I know her perfectly well,' said Sancho; 'and this will venture to say in her behalf, that she will pitch the bar as well

as e'er a lusty young fellow in the village. Bless the sencer! she is a strapper, tall, and hale wind and limb; and can lift out of the mire any squire or knight-errant, who shall chuse her for his sweetheart. Ah! the whore's chick! what a pair of lungs and voice has she got! I heard her one day halloo from the belfry to some young fellows of her acquaintance, who were at work in a corn-field of her father's; and, though it was at the distance of half a league, they heard her as plain as if they had been right under the steeple; and what is better still, she is not at all coy, but behaves herself civilly; and jokes, and romps, and plays the rogue with any body. Now, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, I say that your worship not only has cause to run mad for her, but even to despair and hang yourself; and I am sure nobody that heard it, but would say you had done extremely well; even though the devil should run away with you; and truly, I wish I were now upon my way, merely to see her; for I have not beheld her these many days: and, surely, she must be greatly altered; for the sun and weather does very much damage to the face of a woman who is always at work in the field. To tell you the truth, Sir Don Quixote, I have hitherto lived in great ignorance with respect to my lady Dulcinea, whom I verily believed to be some princess, that your worship was in love with; or a person of such rank as to deserve the rich presents you sent to her; namely, the Biscayan and galley-slaves, with many others whom you conquered in the course of your numberless victories, both before and since I have been your squire. But, when one considers the affair, what benefits can my Lady Aldonza Lorenzo (I mean, my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso) reap from your worship's sending, or having sent those whom you overcome in battle, to fall upon their knees before her? especially as they might chance to come at a time when she is busy, carding flax and threshing corn; in which case, they would be ashamed to see her, and she laugh and be out of humour at their arrival.—'I have frequently observed before now,

Sancho,' said Don Quixote, 'that thou art an everlasting babler; and though of a shallow understanding, thy bluntness borders often on severity; but, to convince thee of thy own ignorance and my discretion, thou shalt give ear to a short story which I will relate.

' Know, then, that once upon a time, a certain handsome widow, young, free, wealthy, and, above all, good-humoured, fell in love with a thick squat, brawny, lay-brother, belonging to a neighbouring convent; the superior of which being informed of the affair, said to the widow, one day, by way of brotherly reproof, "I am amazed, Madam, and not without cause, that a lady of your rank, beauty and fortune, should bestow your affection upon such a low, simple, clownish fellow; when there are so many masters, graduates, and divines, in the convent, among whom your ladyship may chuse, as one picks pears, saying, "This I like, that I loath." The lady answered, with great freedom and vivacity, "Signior, you are very much deceived, and very old-fashioned in your opinion, if you think I have made a bad choice in that fellow who seems so simple: for, in that particular which I admire, he is as much of a philosopher, nay, more, than Aristotle himself." In like manner, Sancho, Dulcinea, del Toboso is as proper for my occasions as the highest princess upon earth. All the poets, who have celebrated ladies, under names which they invented at pleasure, had not really such mistresses as they describe. Dost thou imagine, that all the Amaryllis's, Silvia's, Phillis's, Diana's, Galatea's, Alida's, and other names so often met with in romances, poems, barbers shops, and on the stage, actually belonging to ladies of flesh and blood, who were adored by those who sing, and have sung, their praises? No, surely; but, on the contrary, are, for the most part, feigned and adopted as the subjects of verse, that the poets may be thought men of amorous and gallant dispositions. Wherefore, let it suffice, that I imagine and believe the worthy Aldonza Lorenzo to be beautiful and modest: and as to her pedigree, it is a matter of small importance;

ance ; there is no necessity for taking information on that head, as if she were to be invested with some order of knighthood ; and I take it for granted, that she is the noblest princess in the universe ; for, thou must know, Sancho, if it be a thing of which thou art ignorant, that the two qualities, which, above all others, inspire love, are beauty and reputation : and these two is Dulcinea in consummate possession of ; for in beauty she excels all women, and is equalled by very few in point of reputation. And, to conclude, I imagine that all I have said is true, without exaggeration or diminution. I paint her in my fancy according to my wish, as well in beauty as in rank ; unexcelled by Helen, unrivalled by Lucretia, or any other heroine of ages past, whether Grecian, Roman, or Barbarian ; and let people say what they will, if I am blamed by the ignorant, I shall be acquitted by the most rigid of those who are proper judges of the case.—‘ I say,’ answered Sancho, ‘ that your worship is very much in the right, and I am no better than an ass ; but I know not why I should mention the word ass ; for one ought not to talk of halts in the house of a man who was hanged. But give me the letter, and farewell till I return.’

Don Quixote pulled out the memorandum-book, and stepping aside, with great composure, began to write the letter ; which, when he had finished, he called to Sancho, saying he wanted to read it to him, that he might retain it in his memory, in case he should lose it by the way ; for every thing was to be feared from his evil fortune. ‘ Your worship,’ answered Sancho, ‘ may write it down two or three times in the book, and I will take special care to convey it safely ; but it is folly to suppose that I can retain it in my memory, which is so bad, that I have many a time forgot my own name ; but, notwithstanding, pray, Sir, read it to me ; I shall be hugely rejoiced to hear it ; for it must certainly be curiously penned.’—‘ Listen then, and I will read it,’ said Don Quixote ; who began as follows :

Don Quixote's Letter to Dulcinea del Toboso.

' Sovereign and Sublime Princess,

' HE who is wounded by the edge of absence and whose heart is stuck full of the darts of affliction, most divine Dulcinea del Toboso! wishes thee that health which he is not doomed to enjoy. If I am scorned by thy beauty, if thy virtue affords me no relief, if thy disdain completes my misfortune; albeit, I am inured to suffering, I can ill support the misery I bear; which hath not only been excessive, but also of long duration. My trusty squire Sancho will give thee an ample relation, O ungrateful beauty and lovely foe! of the situation in which I remain on thy account: if it be thy will to succour me, I am thy slave; if not, use thy pleasure; for the end of my life will satisfy thy cruelty and my desire. Thine till death,

The Knight of the Rueful Countenance.'

' By my father's soul!' cried Sancho, 'this is the highest thing I ever heard. Odds-niggers! how your worship writes whatsoever you please, and how curiously you conclude, "The Knight of the Rueful Countenance." I verily believe your worship is the devil himself, and knows every thing.'—'All that knowledge,' replied the knight, 'is necessary for the employment I profess.'—'Why then,' said the squire, 'be so good as to write on the other leaf the order for the three colts, and be sure to subscribe distinctly, that when it is presented, your hand-writing may be known.'—'With all my heart!' said Don Quixote, who having written the order, read it aloud in these terms.

' Dear Niece,

' PLEASE to deliver to Sancho Panza, my squire, or order, at sight of this my first bill of colts, three of the five which I left at home in your custody; which

which three colts I order you to pay, in return for the like number received of him : and this bill, together with his receipt, shall be a sufficient acquittance to you.

‘ Given in the heart of the brown mountain, the twentieth and second of August, this present year.’

Sancho liked the form, and desired his master to sign it. ‘ There is no occasion for my signing it,’ said Quixote, ‘ with any thing but my cypher, which is sufficient not only for three, but three hundred asses.’—‘ As to that, I will take your worship’s word : and now give me leave to go and saddle Rozinante, which, when I have done, and received your blessing, I intend forthwith to depart, without staying to see you play any foolish tricks ; though I will affirm, I have beheld you perform so many, that she will desire to hear no more of the matter.’—‘ At least, Sancho,’ said the knight, ‘ I would have thee, because there is a necessity for it, stay and see me strip, and perform a dozen or two of mad pranks, which I can easily finish in half an hour ; for when thine eyes shall have been witnesses of some things I will act, thou mayest safely swear to what additions thou shalt make in thy report ; and I assure thee, thou wilt not relate the half of what I intend to achieve.’—‘ For the love of God, dear Sir !’ cried Sancho, ‘ let me not see your worship naked ; for it will give me so much uneasiness, that I shall not be able to refrain from weeping ; and my head aches already with the sorrow I felt last night about Dapple ; so that I cannot bear to be set a mourning again ; wherefore, if it be your worship’s pleasure that I should see some of your mad actions, pray dispatch them in your cloaths ; and let them be such as will stand you in most stead : for my own part, I think there is no occasion for any such thing ; and if you dispense with them, it will save time, and send me back the sooner with such news as your worship desires and deserves. For, if my Lady Dulcinea is not prepared to send a reasonable answer

swer, I solemnly protest, I will extract a favourable reply out of her maw, by kicking and cuffing. What ! is it to be borne, that such a renowned knight-errant as your worship, should run mad without why or wherefore, on account of a —— I would not have her ladyship compel me to speak ; or, egad, I shall blab things by the dozen, even though they should spoil the market. I am a rare fellow at that sport. I find she knows a little of my temper, otherwise i'faith ! she would take care to give me no offence.—‘ In good faith, Sancho,’ saith Don Quixote, ‘ thou seemest to be as mad as myself.’—‘ Not quite so mad,’ replied the squire, ‘ but a little more cholerick ; but enough of that. What eatables has your worship got to live upon till my return ? will you go to the high-road, and rob the shepherds, like Cardenio ?’—‘ Let not that give thee any concern,’ answered the knight ; ‘ though I had store of provisions by me, I should eat nothing but the herbs and fruits which this meadow and these trees afford ; the perfection of my design consisting in abstaining from food, and in encountering other hardships.’—‘ Your worship must know,’ said Sancho, ‘ that I am afraid I shall not find my way back again to this concealed and unfrequented place, in which I leave your worship.’—‘ Take good notice of the marks,’ answered the knight, ‘ and I shall endeavour to remain always near this very spot : nay, I will take care to ascend the highest rocks hereabouts, that I may have a chance of descrying thee afar off, in thy return. But, the best scheme for preventing thy being bewildered, will be, to cut down some of the furze that grows here in great plenty, and drop bunches of it, at small distances on the way, until thou shalt reach the flat country : and they will serve as land-marks to guide thee hither on thy return, like the clue of Theseus, in the labyrinth of Crete.’

‘ I will take your advice,’ said Sancho ; who accordingly cutting a large bundle, begged his master’s blessing, and took his leave, not without many tears on both sides. Then mounting Rozinante,

nante, whom Don Quixote strongly recommended to his care, commanding him to pay as much regard to the steed as he would shew for his own person; he set out for the plain, scattering by the way, the furze he had cut, according to the direction of his master. In this manner then did he begin his journey, notwithstanding the incessant importunities of Don Quixote, who solicited him to stay and see some of his extravagancies: but he had not travelled above an hundred yards, when he returned, saying, 'I confess your worship was in the right, when you observed, that, in order to my swearing with a safe conscience that I have seen you perform mad pranks, it would be necessary for you to play some in my presence; although, in my opinion, I have seen a pretty good sample already in your staying here by yourself.'—'Did not I tell thee so, Sancho?' said Don Quixote: 'wait a little, and I will finish them in a twinkling.'—So saying, he stripped off his breeches in a great hurry, leaving his posteriors covered by the tail of his shirt alone, and, without farther ceremony, cut a couple of capers, and a like number of tumbles, with his head down and his heels up, disclosing particulars, which shocked the modesty of Sancho so much, that, in order to avoid the sight of them a second time, he turned Rozinante, fully satisfied and pleased, that he might now honestly swear he had left his master distracted. We will therefore let him pursue his journey, till his return, which was more speedy than could be expected.

CHAPTER XII.

A Continuation of the Refinements in Love, practised by Don Quixote in the Brown Mountain.

BUT, to return to the account of what the Knight of the Rueful Countenance executed when he found himself alone. The history relates, that, having performed the capers and the tumbles, naked from the waist downward, and perceived that Sancho was gone, without waiting to see more of his extravagancies, he climbed to the top of a high rock, and there revolved what he had often reflected upon

upon without coming to any conclusion ; namely, whether it was better and more fit for his purpose, to imitate Orlando in his outrages, or Amadis in his melancholy madness. ‘ It is not to be wondered at,’ said he within himself, ‘ if Orlando was such a stout and valiant knight as he is represented ; for he was actually enchanted, and invulnerable by every weapon but the point of a pin, thrust into his foot, upon which he always wore a shoe with seven soles of iron : though that precaution did not avail him against Bernardo del Carpeio, who being informed of the contrivance, strangled him in his arms at the battle of Roncevalles : but the circumstance of his valour apart, let us consider that of his losing his senses, which actually happened, when he found the tokens in the fountain, and received the information of the shepherd, by which he learned that Angelica had slept more than two afternoons with Modero, the little Moor with curled locks, who was Agramante’s page ; and, truly, if he was convinced in his own mind, that his mistress had misbehaved in that manner, it was no great feat to run mad upon the discovery. But why should I imitate him in his madness, when the occasion is not similar ? for my Dulcinea del Toboso, I dare swear, never in all the days of her life beheld one Moor in his own likeness ; and is this day as much a virgin as the mother that bore her ; I should therefore do her a manifest injury, in imagining otherwise, and adopting that kind of madness which possessed Orlando Furioso. On the other hand, I am sensible that Amadis de Gaul, without losing his senses, or acting the madman, acquired as much, or more fame than he, in the character of a lover ; for, according to the history, all that he did, when he found himself in disgrace with his mistress Oriana, who banished him from her presence during pleasure, was to retire, in company of a hermit, to the poor rock, where he contented himself with bemoaning his misfortune, until Heaven sent him succour, in the midst of his great necessity and affliction. If this circumstance, therefore, be true, as I know it is, why should

HENSHALL'S EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.



DON QUIXOTE.
Don Quixote return to his house after
being severely beaten by the Mule driver
See Vol. 1. Chap. 2. Page 33.



Should I now take the trouble of stripping myself naked, or give umbrage to these trees, which have done me no harm? or what reason have I to defile the pure stream of these rivulets, which, when I want it, will yield me pleasant drink? Flourish then, the memory of Amadis! and let him be imitated as much as possible, by Don Quixote de la Mancha, of whom may be said, that which is recorded of another*, "If he did not atchieve great things, at least he died in attempting." And, though I am not banished nor disdained by my Dulcinea, let it suffice, as I have already said, that I am absent from her. Come then, let us begin: recur to my remembrance, ye feats of Amadis, and initiate me in the imitation of your fame. I know his chief exercise was prayer, and in that too will I follow his example.' So saying, he composed a rosary of the large galls of a cork-tree, which he strung together instead of beads; but he found an insurmountable difficulty in the want of an hermit to confess and console him: wherefore, he entertained himself in strolling about the meadow, writing and engraving verses on the barks of trees, and the smooth sand; all of them on the subject of his own melancholy, or in praise of his mistress Dulcinea; but, after he was found in this place, none, except the following, remained intellible and entire.

I.

YE trees and herbs, so green and tall,
That shade this meadow, and adorn,
If you rejoice not at my thrall,
Give ear unto a wretch forlorn;
Nor let my grief, though loud, invade
Your peace; but, by Don Quixote, be a
Self-offer'd tax of sorrow paid
In absence of his Dulcinea

del Toboso.

These

* Probably alluding to the epitaph of Phaeton.

*Hic situs est Phaeton, currus auriga paterni,
Quem si non tenuit, magnis tamen excidit ausis.*

II.

These are the rocks to which he's driven
 By her who seems not much to care for
 The truest lover under heaven ;
 And yet he knows not why nor wherefore.
 By love toss'd like a tennis-ball,
 A cask of tears will not defray a
 Whole day's expence of grief and gall,
 In absence of his Dulcinea

del Toboso.

III:

Among these craggy rocks and brambles,
 He hangs, alas ! on sorrow's tenters ;
 Or curses, as alone he rambles,
 The cruel cause of his misventures.
 Unpitying love about his ears,
 With scourge severe, began to play a
 Most dreadful game, that made his tears
 Flow for his absent Dulcinea

del Toboso.

These verses, with the addition of del Toboso to the name of Dulcinea, afforded infinite diversion to those who found them : for they concluded Don Quixote had imagined, that, if he named her without this title, the stanza could not possibly be understood ; and this was really the case, as he afterwards owned. Many other ditties did he compose ; but as we have already observed, none but these three stanzas could be decyphered and read. In this amusement, in sighing, invoking the fauns and sylvans of those woods, the nymphs of the brooks, with the damp and doleful echo to hear, console, and resound his complaints, and in culling plants to sustain nature, he employed himself till the return of Sancho, who, had he stayed three weeks, instead of three days, the knight of the rueful countenance would have been so emaciated and disfigured, that he could not have been known by the mother who bore him.

However, it will not be amiss to leave him, engrossed by his sighs and poetry, in order to recount what happened to Sancho Panza, in the execution of his embassy. Having reached the high way, this
 trusty

trusty messenger took the road to Toboso, and next day arrived at the very inn where he had met with the disgraceful adventure of the blanketing. He no sooner perceived the unlucky house, than he fancied himself cutting capers in the air again; and was very loth to enter, although it was then dinner time, and he was very much instigated by the desire of tasting something hot, as he had lived for many days past on cold victuals only. This inclination compelled him to ride close up to the inn, where, while he was sitting in suspense, and hesitating whether or not he should enter, two persons happened to come to the door, and knowing him immediately, the one said to the other, "Pray, Mr. Licentiate, is not that man on horseback our neighbour Sancho Panza; who, as the housekeeper told us, went out with our adventurer in quality of squire?"—"The very same," answered the licentiate; and that is the individual horse of our friend Don Quixote." And no wonder they should know him so easily; for they were no other than the curate and barber of the knight's town, by whom the scrutiny and trial of his books were held. Having therefore recognized Sancho Panza and Rozinante, and being impatient to hear news of Don Quixote, they ran up to the squire, and the curate called him by name, saying, 'Friend Sancho, where is your master!' Sancho, who recollected them also, resolved to conceal the place and condition in which he had left his master: and therefore answered, that the knight was in a certain place, employed about a certain affair of the utmost importance, which he durst not disclose for the eyes that stood in his head. 'That pretence will not do, Sancho,' said the barber; 'if you refuse to tell where he is, we shall imagine, as indeed we do, that you have robbed and murdered him, and taken possession of his horse; so that in good sooth, you must either produce him, or in this very spot, we will——' 'You have no occasion,' cried Sancho, interrupting him, 'to threaten people in this manner; I am not the man to rob and murder any person; every man

must fall by his own fortune, or by the will of God that created him : my master is found and safe, doing penance in the midst of that mountain, to his heart's content.' He then, without pausing, in a breath informed them of the condition in which he left him, recounted all the adventures which had happened to him, and told them of the letter he was carrying to my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, who was no other than Lorenzo Corchuelo's daughter, with whom his master was up to his ears in love.

They were astonished at what the squire related ; and though well acquainted with the particular species of Don Quixote's madness, this instance afforded fresh admiration : they desired Sancho to shew them the letter for the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso ; and he told them it was only a rough draught, written on the leaf of a pocket-book ; and that his master had ordered him to get it transcribed on a sheet of paper, with the first convenient opportunity. The curate promised to transcribe it in a fair legible hand, and again desired a sight of it. Sancho put his hand into his bosom, in search of the book, which, however, he could not find ; and indeed, had he fumbled till this time, it would have been to no purpose ; for he had left it with Don Quixote, who had forgot to give, as he to ask it of him, before he set out. Sancho missing his charge, grew pale as death, and searching again his whole body with great eagerness, could find nothing ; upon which, without more ado, he laid hold of his beard with both hands, and plucked one half of it from his chin ; then, with vast dispatch and precipitation, belaboured his face and nose in such a manner, as left the whole covered with blood. The curate and barber seeing him make so free with his own person, asked what had happened to him, that made him handle himself so roughly. 'What has happened to me!' cried the squire, 'I have lost and let slip through my fingers in an instant, three ass colts, each of which was as tall as a tower.' 'By what means?' resumed the barber. 'I have lost,' answered Sancho,

Sancho, 'the pocket book, in which was written the letter for Dulcinea, together with an order, signed by my master's own hand, desiring his niece to deliver to me three colts out of four or five which he has at home.' At the same time he told them how he had lost Dapple. The curate comforted him, by saying, that when he returned, his master would renew the order, and give him a bill upon paper, as the custom is, for those written in pocket books are never accepted or paid.

With this assurance Sancho consoled himself observing, since that was the case, he should not give himself much uneasiness about the loss of the letter, which, as he retained it by art, he could cause to be transcribed where and when he pleased. The barber desired him to repeat it, telling him they would transcribe it; upon which Sancho began to scratch his head, in order to recollect it, standing sometimes on one foot, sometimes on the other. One while he fixed his eyes upon the ground, then lifted them up to Heaven: at last, after a most tedious pause, during which he gnawed off the half of one of his nails, and kept his hearers in the most impatient suspense; 'Fore God, Mr. Licentiate,' said he, 'I believe the devil has run away with every word that I remembered of this letter; though I am positive it began with subterrene and sublime princess!'—'It could not be subterrene,' said the barber, 'but superterrene or sovereign.'—'You are in the right,' resumed Sancho; 'then, if my memory does not fail me, it went on with the smitten, the sleep-less, and the fore, kisses your hands, most ungrateful and unregarded beauty; and something or other of health and distemper which he wished her; running on at this rate, till he concluded with, "yours, till death, the Knight of the Rueful Countenance."

The hearers were not a little diverted with this specimen of Sancho's memory, which they applauded very much; desiring him to repeat the letter again, twice over, that they might retain it, until they could have an opportunity of transcribing it. He accordingly renewed his efforts, repeated it three

times ; and as often recited three thousand other absurdities. He likewise gave them an account of every thing which had befallen his master ; but mentioned not a syllable of the blanketting that had happened to himself, in that very inn which he refused to enter ; nay, he gave them to understand that his master, as soon as he could bring him a favourable dispatch from my Lady-Dulcinea del Toboso, would put himself in the way of becoming an emperor or monarch at least, according to the plan settled between them. This he represented as a very easy matter, considering the valour of his person, and strength of his arm ; and told him, that his design would be no sooner accomplished, than the knight would bestow upon him in marriage (for by that time, he must of necessity be a widower) one of the maids of honour to the empress ; a fine young lady, and heiress of vast and wealthy estate upon the main land, without any oilands or islands, which he did not much care for.

Sancho uttered this piece of wrong-headed information with such composure, wiping his nose from time to time, that his townsmen could not help admiring anew the madness of Don Quixote ; which, like a whirlpool, had sucked in and swept along with it the understanding of this poor simpleton. They did not chuse to fatigue themselves with endeavours to convince him of his error ; but, as they believed it was not prejudicial to his conscience, resolved, for their amusement, to encourage him in his folly : with this view they advised him to pray to God for long life and health to his master ; and observed, that it was a thing both likely and feasible that he should, in process of time, become an emperor, at least an archbishop, or attain some station of equal dignity. To this encouragement Sancho replied, ‘Gentlemen, if fortune should bring matters about, so as that my master should incline to be an archbishop rather than an emperor, I should be glad to know what archbishops-errant bestow upon their squires ?’ The curate told him, that they commonly gave him some simple benefice, curacy, or the office of sacrifician,

tan, with a good yearly income, besides the fees of the altar, which are usually reckoned at as much more. 'In order to fill an employment of that kind,' answered Sancho, 'the squire must be unmarried, and at least capable of assisting at mass; and if that be the case, what will become of me, who have not only the misfortune to be married, but am also ignorant of the first letter of the A, B, C; should my master take it into his head to be an archbishop, rather than an emperor, according to the custom of the knights-errant?'—'Don't make yourself uneasy about that matter, friend Sancho,' said the barber; 'for we will entreat and advise your master, nay, even make it an affair of conscience, for him to become an emperor rather than an archbishop, as a station more suited to his disposition, which is more warlike than studious.'—'I was of the same opinion,' resumed Sancho; 'but now, I'll venture to say, he has a capacity for every thing; and what I intend to do, is to beseech our Lord to direct his choice to that station which will be most for his own honour and my advantage.'—'You speak like a sensible man,' said the curate; 'and in so doing will act the part of a good Christian; but our present business is to think on some means of putting an end to this useless penance your master has imposed upon himself; and in the mean time go in to dinner.' Sancho desired them to enter, saying he would wait for them at the door, and afterwards tell them why he did not go in, and wherefore it was not proper for him so to do; but begged they would be so good as to bring out something hot for himself, and some barley for Rozinante. They accordingly went in, and in a little time the barber brought him out a mess of hot victuals. After they had both maturely deliberated about the means of accomplishing their design, the curate fell upon a scheme extremely well adapted to the taste of the knight, as well as to their purpose. He proposed to clothe himself in the dress of a lady-errant, and that the barber should disguise himself, as well as he could in the likeness of a squire; which being done, they should go to the place where Don

Quixote was, and the priest, on pretence of being a damsel in distress, should beg a boon, which he, as a valiant knight-errant, could not help granting. This boon should be a request, that he would accompany her to a certain place whither she would conduct him, there to redress an injury she had received from a discourteous knight; and the boon should be attended with an humble supplication, that he would not desire her to take off her mask, nor ask any question about her affairs, until he should have done her justice upon her adversary. And as he firmly believed that Don Quixote would comply with any request made in that stile, he hoped, by these means, to withdraw him from the mountain, and conduct him to his own habitation, where they would endeavour to find some remedy for his strange disorder.

CHAPTER XIII.

How the Curate and Barber set out on the Execution of their Plan; with other Events worthy to be recorded in this sublime History.

THIS scheme of the curate was so well relished by the barber, that they began to put it in execution immediately; by borrowing of the landlady a petticoat and tucker, for which the priest left a new cassock in pawn; while the barber made an artificial beard of the tail of a pied ox, in which the innkeeper used to stick his comb. When the hostess asked what occasion they had for these things, the curate gave her a brief account of Don Quixote's madness, and explained the use to which they intended to put the disguise, in order to disengage him from the mountain where he then was. The innkeeper and his wife immediately discovered that this lunatick was no other than their quondam guest, who was author of the balsam, and master of the blankettèd squire; and recounted to the curate every thing that had happened, not even forgetting the circumstance which Sancho was at such pains to conceal. In short, the landlady dressed up the curate in a most curious manner; she put upon him a cloth petticoat flounced and furbelowed, with a broad

broad border of black velvet, and a close jerkin of green velvet, garnished with robings of white sattin, which, together with the petticoat, seemed to have been made in the reign of King Bamba* ; he would not suffer himself to be coifed, but covered his head with a quilted linen night-cap, which he always carried about with him ; and bound his forehead with a garter of black taffety, making a sort of mask with the other, which effectually concealed his countenance and beard. Over all, he flapped his beaver, which was so broad that it might have served for an umbrella ; and, wrapping himself up in his cloak, mounted his mule, sitting sideways like a woman ; while the barber bestrid his own beast, with his beard flowing down to his girdle, of a white and red colour, being made, as we have before observed, of a pied ox's tail.

Thus equipped, they took leave of every body present, even the kind Maritornes, who promised, though a sinner, to mumble a whole rosary over in prayers to God, for the good success of that arduous and Christian design they had undertaken ; but scarce had they sallied from the inn, when the curate began to think he was to blame for disguising himself ; it being, in his opinion, indecent for a priest to appear in such a manner, how much soever depended upon their success. He therefore proposed that he should exchange characters with the barber, who might act the part of the damsel in distress, while he took that of the squire, which he thought did not so much profane the dignity of the cloth ; and unless his neighbour would agree to this proposal, he assured him he was resolved to go no farther, even if the devil himself should carry off Don Quixote. At that instant Sancho chanced to come up, and seeing them in such a garb could not refrain from laughing ;

* Bamba, or Wamba, king of the Visigoths in Spain, mounted the throne in the year 672, and was famous for his success against the Arabians, as well as for his attachment to the Christian religion, as a proof of which he retired into a monastery, and resigned the kingdom to Ervige.

laughing : in short, the barber assented to every thing the other proposed ; and the plan being thus altered, the curate began to instruct him touching his behaviour and speech to Don Quixote, in order to move and induce him to accompany them, and quit that place he had chosen for the scene of his vain and extravagant penance. The barber told him, that, without his lessons, he knew very well how to demean himself in the character ; and as he did not chuse to put on the dress till they should be near Don Quixote, he folded it up with great care ; the priest adjusted his beard ; and both together proceeded on their journey, under the direction of Sancho Panza, who by the way related to them what happened between his master and the madman whom they met with in the Brown Mountain ; concealing, nevertheless, the circumstance of the portmanteau, and it's contents ; for, notwithstanding his simplicity, our youth was as covetous as wiser people.

Next day they came to the broom boughs, which Sancho had strewed, in order to ascertain the place where he had left his master : he no sooner, therefore, perceived his marks, than he told them that was the entrance into the mountain ; and desired them to put on their dresses, if they were necessary towards the deliverance of his master ; for they had already assured him, that their travelling in such disguise was of the utmost importance, in disengaging the knight from that disagreeable course of life he had chosen : and they charged him not to tell his master that he knew who they were ; and if he should ask, as doubtless he would, whether or not he had delivered the letter to Dulcinea, they advised him to answer in the affirmative, and tell him, that as she could not read it, she had sent her answer by word of mouth, commanding him, on pain of her displeasure, to appear in her presence, with all convenient speed, on an affair of the utmost consequence to him : for, with this answer, and other speeches they intended to make, they did not at all doubt of reconciling him to a better way of life, and prevail upon him immediately to begin his career towards
being

being an emperor or king ; and as to the office of archbishop, Sancho had nothing to fear. The squire listened to these directions, which he carefully deposited in his memory, thanking them heartily for their intention to advise his master to accept of an emperor's crown, rather than an archbishop's mitre ; as he was very sensible that emperors could do more for squires than archbishops-errant. He also proposed to go before, in search of his master, and impart to him this answer of his lady, which, he assured them, would be sufficient to bring him out of the mountain, without their being put to any farther trouble. They approved of his opinion, and resolved to stay where they were until he should return with the news of his having found Don Quixote : accordingly, Sancho proceeded towards the heart of the mountain, leaving them in a spot watered by a small purling brook, and shaded in a most cool and agreeable manner by some rocks and trees that grew round it.

It being then the month of August, when the heat in those parts is excessive, and three in the afternoon, which is the hottest time of the day, they were the more charmed with the situation, which was so inviting, that they chose it for the place of their residence until Sancho should return. While they lay at their ease, under the cover of this shade, their ears were saluted with the sound of a voice, which, though unaccompanied by any instrument, sung so sweet and melodiously, that they were struck with astonishment ; little expecting to meet with such a delicious warbler in that unfrequented place ; for though it is usually said, that the woods and mountains abound with shepherds, who sing most enchantingly, that report is rather the fiction of poets than the voice of truth : besides, the verses which they heard were not composed in the rustick phrase of clowns, but in a polite and courtly strain ; as may be perceived by the song itself, which follows :

AN!

I.

AH ! what inspires my woeful strain ?
 Unkind disdain !
 Ah ! what augments my misery ?
 Fell jealousy !
 Or say, what hath my patience worn ?
 An absent lover's scorn !
 The torments, then, that I endure,
 No mortal remedy can cure :
 For every languid hope is slain,
 By absence, jealousy, disdain !

II.

From Love, my unrelenting foe,
 These sorrows flow !
 My infant glory's overthrown,
 By Fortune's frown !
 Confirm'd in this my wretched state,
 By the decrees of Fate,
 In Death alone I hope release
 From this compounded, dire disease ;
 Whose cruel pangs to aggravate,
 Fortune and Love conspire with Fate !

III.

Ah ! what will mitigate my doom ?
 The silent tomb !
 Ah ! what retrieve departed joy ?
 Inconstancy !
 Or say, can aught but frenzy bear
 This tempest of despair ?
 All other efforts, then, are vain,
 To cure this soul-tormenting pain,
 That owns no other remedy
 Than madness, death, inconstancy.

The hour, the season, and the solitude, conspired with the agreeable voice of the singer, to increase the wonder and satisfaction of the hearers, who listened for some time in expectation of something else ; but the silence having continued a good while, they resolved to go in quest of the person who sung so enchantingly, and were just going to set out on this design, when they were arrested by the same voice, which again saluted their ears with this other song :

I.

O sacred Friendship ! mild and gay,
 Who to the regions of the bless'd
 Hath soar'd, and left mankind a prey
 To fraud, in thy resemblance dress'd,

Auspicious

II.

Auspicious hear, and hither send
Thy sister truth, with radiant eyes,
To brand the false professing friend,
Detected in the fair disguise.

III.

Or come thyself, and re-inspire
The purpose candid and humane ;
Else Peace and Order will retire,
While Horror and Confusion reign.

This sonnet was concluded with a most profound sigh, and the curate and barber began again to listen for more ; but, finding the musick converted into mournful sobs and interjections, they were determined to know who this melancholy person was, who sung so well, and groaned so piteously. They had not gone many paces with this intent, when turning the point of a rock, they perceived a man of the same make and appearance that Sancho described, when he related the story of Cardenio : he did not seem surprized at the sight of them, but stood with his head reclining upon his breast, in a very pensive posture, without lifting his eyes to look at them, after their first sudden appearance. The curate, who was a well-spoken man, concluding, from the description, that this must be he whose misfortune he had been apprized of, went up, and, in a short but pathetick address, exhorted and entreated him to quit that miserable course of life, which was the greatest of all misfortunes, and altogether perverted the end of his being. Cardenio being at that time in one of his lucid intervals, entirely free of that frantick paroxysm which used so utterly to deprive him of his senses, and seeing two people so differently dressed from those he commonly met with in that solitude, could not help being somewhat surprized ; especially, when he heard him talk of his misfortune as a circumstance with which they were well acquainted ; for the curate had mentioned it in the course of his expostulation ; and therefore he answered in this manner : ‘ I plainly perceive, gentlemen, that Heaven, which is careful in succouring the good, and sometimes even the bad, hath sent,
thought

though I little deserve such favour and condescension, divers people into this unfrequented solitude, so remote from all commerce and society, in order to convince me, by just and various arguments, how unreasonably I act in leading this kind of life, which they have endeavoured to make me exchange for a better ; and, as they know not the reasons I have to think that, in quitting this situation, I shall be plunged into a worse, they have perhaps looked upon me as a person of very shallow understanding, or, which is still a conjecture more unfavourable, a downright madman : and truly, it is not to be wondered at, if that was really the case ; for I can easily conceive, that my misfortunes operate so intensely upon my imagination, and impair my faculties so much, that sometimes, in spite of all my endeavours to the contrary, I become, like that rock, void of all sentiment and knowledge ; and am convinced of my infirmity too late, when people shew me the marks of what I have done, while I was under the influence of that terrible transport : then, all that I can do, is to bewail my distemper ; curse my lot in vain ; and, in excuse of my madness, relate my sufferings to all who express the least desire of hearing them ; that those of sounder judgment, knowing the cause, may not wonder at the effects ; and if they cannot prevent, at least pardon my frenzy ; converting their indignation at my extravagance into compassion for my woes ; and if you, gentlemen, are come with that intention, which hath brought others to this place, before you proceed with your prudent admonitions, I entreat you to hear the detail of my misfortunes, which you do not yet know, and then, perhaps, you will save yourselves the trouble which you might otherwise take in consoling an affliction that admits of no consolation.

The two friends, who desired nothing else than to hear from his own mouth the cause of his misfortune, earnestly begged he would recount it, and promised to attempt nothing contrary to his own inclination in the way of remedy or comfort. Thus assured.

assured, the melancholy gentleman began his distressful story, nearly in the same words and circumstances which he had used a few days before, to Don Quixote and the goatherd, when he was interrupted in the affair of Mr. Elisabat, by the knight's punctuality in asserting the decorum of chivalry, as the particulars of that quarrel have been already related: but now he remained fortunately free from his paroxysm, and, of consequence, had time to finish the narration, which was imperfect before. When he therefore came to the circumstances of the letter which Don Fernando had found between the leaves of *Amadis de Gaul**, he said he remembered the contents, and accordingly repeated them in these terms.

“ Lucinda to Cardenio.

“ I every day discover new qualities in Cardenio, which oblige and compel me to esteem him the more. If you are inclined to extricate me out of all suspense, you may effectuate your purpose without the least prejudice to my honour; for my father, who is well acquainted with your virtues, loves me dearly, and, far from tyrannizing over my affections, will cheerfully grant that which is so justly your due, if your passion is such as I wish and believe it to be.”

‘ I resolved, as I have already told you, to demand Lucinda in marriage, upon the receipt of this letter, which not only confirmed Don Fernando’s high opinion of her prudence and virtue, but also inflamed him with the desire of ruining my hopes before I should be able to bring them to maturity. I told this faithless friend, Lucinda’s father expected that mine should propose the match; and that I durst not communicate my desire to him, lest he should refuse to comply with it: not that he was ignorant of Lucinda’s rank, virtue, beauty, and

Vol. II. F qualifications,

* There is no such letter mentioned in his conversation with Don Quixote.

qualifications, which were sufficient to ennoble any other family in Spain; but, because I understood he was averse to my being married, until he should see what Duke Ricardo would do in my behalf: in short, I told him that I would not venture to propose it, being afraid not only of this ill consequence, but also of many others which I could not foresee; although I had a strong impression upon my mind, that my wishes would never be completed. In answer to this declaration, Don Fernando undertook to manage the affair, and prevail upon my father to propose the match to Lucinda's parents — O villain! more ambitious than Marius, more cruel than Cataline, more savage than Sylla, more fraudulent than Galalon, more treacherous than Vellido*, more vengeful than Julian, and more covetous than Judas! Cruel, false, vindictive traitor! what injuries hadst thou suffered from this poor credulous wretch, who with such confidence disclosed to thee the most secret recesses of his soul?—What offence had he given? what words had he uttered, or what advice had he offered, that did not directly tend to thy honour and advantage?—But, unhappy that I am! wherefore should I complain? seeing it is a thing certain, that when once the tide of misfortune, heaped up by one's malignant stars, begins to descend with violence and fury, no earthly mound can oppose, nor human industry divert, its course. Who could imagine that such an illustrious, accomplished young gentleman as Don Fernando, who lay under obligations for the services I had done him, and was powerful enough to obtain the gratification of his wish, whithersoever his amorous inclination pointed, should plague himself, as I may say, in attempts to rob me of my single lamb, even before I had possessed it.

But let us lay aside these vain and unprofitable reflections, and rejoin the broken thread of my unfortunate story. Well then, Don Fernando, perceiving

* Who murdered Sancho I. king of Castile, while he was engaged in the siege of Zamora.

ceiving that my presence would be an obstruction to the execution of his false and perfidious design, resolved to send me back to his elder brother, on pretence of getting money to pay for six horses, which he purposely bought that very day he undertook to speak to my father, in order to have an excuse for sending me away, that he might, in my absence, the more easily succeed in his villainous intention. Was it possible for me to prevent this treachery, or indeed conceive his design! No, surely. On the contrary, I offered, with the utmost alacrity, to set out forthwith, so pleased was I with the purchase he had made. That very night I had a private conversation with Lucinda, in which I told her the scheme I had concerted with Don Fernando, and bade her rest assured in the hope that our just and honourable desires would soon be gratified. She, as little suspicious of Don Fernando's perfidy as I was, entreated me to return with speed, believing that our wishes would be completed as soon as my father should mention the affair to her's. I don't know upon what account, her eyes were filled with tears when she pronounced these words; and something that seemed to swell in her throat, prevented her from uttering another syllable, though she looked as if she had something more to say. I was confounded at this new circumstance, which had never happened before: in all our former conversations, which my good fortune offered, or my diligence effected, there had been nothing but joy and satisfaction, without any mixture of tears, sighs, jealousy, dread, or suspicion; all my discourse used to consist of acknowledgments to Heaven, for having bestowed upon me such a mistress, whose beauty I extolled, and whose virtue and good sense I admired; while she returned the compliment, by praising those qualities in me, which she, in the partiality of her fondness, deemed worthy of applause; besides, we used to entertain each other with an account of a thousand trifling accidents that happened among our neighbours and acquaintance: and the height of my vivacity never amounted to

more than the seizing of one of her delicate white hands, and pressing it to my lips, through the narrow distance betwixt the rails that divided us. But, on that night which preceded the fatal day of my departure, she wept, sighed, and sobbed, and left me filled with confusion and surprise, and terrified at such unusual and melancholy marks of grief and affliction in my Lucinda. But I was flattered by my hopes, which ascribed the whole to the strength of her passion, and that sorrow which is commonly produced by the absence of a beloved object. In fine, I set out, pensive and sad, my imagination tortured with suspicions and doubts, which my reflection could neither digest nor explain: a sure presage of the melancholy fate that awaited me.

I arrived at the place of my destination, and delivered my letters to Don Fernando's brother, who received me kindly; but, far from dispatching me immediately, desired me, to my infinite regret, to wait eight whole days in a place where his father should not see me, because his brother had writ to him to send the money without the knowledge of the duke. But this was altogether an invention of the false Fernando, whose brother had money enough, and could have sent me back the very same day on which I arrived. This was such an order as I was scarce able to obey, for I thought it impossible to support life for so many days in the absence of Lucinda, considering the sorrow in which I had left her. Yet, notwithstanding, I resolved to do my duty like a faithful servant, though I very well foresaw that my obedience must be at the expence of my peace. Four days of the eight were not yet elapsed, when a man came in search of me, and gave me a letter, the superscription of which I no sooner beheld, than I knew it to be written by Lucinda's own hand. I opened it with fear and trembling, believing that there must be something very extraordinary in the case, which induced her to write to me in my absence; considering that while I was present

sent, she had been so sparing of her pen*. But before I had read a syllable, I asked the messenger, who had put it into his hands, and how long he had been upon his journey? He answered, that passing through a certain street, about noon, he was stopped by a very beautiful young lady, who called to him from a window, saying, with great earnestness, while the tears trickled from her eyes, "Brother, if you are a Christian, as you seem to be, I entreat you, for God's sake, to carry this letter to the place and person for whom it is directed; they are both well known; and in so doing, you will render a piece of service acceptable to the Lord. That you may not want conveniences upon the road, here is something to defray the expence of your journey.—So saying, she threw down a handkerchief, in which were tied a hundred rials, this gold ring, and the letter I have delivered. Then, without waiting for a reply, she went from the window, after having seen me take up the handkerchief and the letter, and made signs that I would do as she desired. Accordingly, finding myself so well paid for the trouble I should be at, and seeing by the direction, that you was the person to whom it was sent, (and I know you perfectly well;) induced, moreover, by the tears of that beautiful young lady. I resolved to trust no other messenger, but come and deliver it with my own hand; and in sixteen hours, which are past since I received it, I have travelled to this place, which, as you know, is about eighteen leagues from our town." 'While I listened attentively to the information of this grateful and extraordinary courier, my legs shook under me in such a manner, that I could scarce

F 3

stand

* The original *pues presente pocas vezes lo havia*, signifies, 'Since while I was present she did it very seldom.' This at first sight appears a solecism, and the petulant critic will exclaim, 'What occasion had she to write to her lover who was present, unless she had lost the faculty of speech?' But the seeming absurdity will vanish, when we reflect that by *present*, he means in the same city with his mistress, to whom, however, according to the custom of Spain, he had little or no access but by a literary correspondence.

stand upright. At length, however, I ventured to read the letter, which contained these words.

"THE promise which Don Fernando made, to prevail upon your father to propose a match to mine, hath been performed more to his inclination than your advantage. Know, Cardenio, that your pretended friend asked me in marriage for himself; and my father, swayed by the advantage which he thinks Don Fernando has over you in point of fortune, hath given his consent so much in earnest, that two days hence the nuptials are to be celebrated so privately, that none but Heaven, and some people in the family, are to be present at the marriage. My situation you may guess. If it be in your power, return with all the speed, and the event of this affair will shew whether I love you tenderly or not. Heaven grant that this may come to your hand before mine shall be presented to him who so ill performs the duty of a friend!"

' This, which was the sum of what the letter contained, made me set out immediately, without waiting for any answer, or the money for which I had come. For, by that time, I plainly perceived that it was not the purchase of the horses, but his own treacherous intention, which had induced Don Fernando to send me out of the way. The indignation I conceived against him, together with the fear of losing the jewel which I had acquired, and treasured up with such unwearied services and care, added wings to my speed, and conveyed me to the place of my habitation, just at the hour and minute proper for my going to visit Lucinda. I entered the town privately, and leaving my mule at the house of the honest man who brought the letter, I went to the rail, which was the constant witness of our love, and there was so far favoured by fortune as to find Lucinda.—We knew each other presently; though not as we ought to have known each other. But, who is he who can arrogate praise to himself, for having fathomed and discerned the capricious sentiments and sickly disposition of women? Surely no man on earth.—But this apart, Lucinda perceiving me,
"Cardenio,"

"Cardenio," said she, "I am now in my bridal dress, and this moment expected in the hall by the traitor Don Fernando, my covetous father, and some other people, who shall bear witness to my death sooner than to my marriage. Be not confounded, my friend, but endeavour to be present at the sacrifice, which, if I cannot prevent by my declaration, I wear a dagger concealed, which can obstruct a more vigorous determination; and, by putting an end to my life begin to convince thee of the sincere passion I have always entertained, and still retain, for my Cardenio." Afraid I should want time to answer her, I replied with great hurry and confusion, "Let your words be verified by your deeds Madam. If you have a dagger to assert your love, I wear a sword to defend it; or should fortune prove our foe, to rid myself of life." I believe she did not hear all that I said, because she was called away in a hurry to the bridegroom, who waited for her.

'Thus deepened the night of my distress; thus set the sun of my happiness! I remained without light to my eyes, or reflection to my mind, for some time; I could neither resolve to enter her father's house, nor remove to any other place; at length, however, considering of what consequence my presence might be, in case any thing extraordinary should happen, I recollected myself, as well as I could, and went in, without being perceived, as I was well acquainted with all the passages and corners of the house, and was favoured by the confusion which then prevailed in it on account of the nuptials. Thus entering, unseen, I found means to conceal myself in the hollow of a window in the hall, that was covered by the meeting of two pieces of tapestry, from behind which I could, without being perceived, observe every thing that happened.

'How shall I describe the throbbings and palpitations of my heart, the images that occurred to my fancy, the reflections that I made while I remained in that situation! they were such as I neither can nor ought to describe. Let it suffice to say, the bridegroom came into the hall, without any other ornaments

ornaments than his usual dress, attended by a first cousin of Lucinda, in quality of bridesman, no other person being present, except some servants of the family. A little while after Lucinda came in from her closet, accompanied by her mother and two waiting-women; and as richly dressed and adorned as her rank and beauty deserved, or as the perfection of gaiety and gallantry could invent. The suspense and transport of my soul would not allow me to observe and remark the particulars of her dress; I could only take notice of the colours, which were carnation and white; and the blaze of jewels that adorned her, which was even excelled by the singular beauty of her golden locks, that struck the eye with more splendor than all the precious stones, together with the light of four torches that burned in the hall.—O memory! thou mortal enemy of my repose! to what purpose dost thou now represent to my fancy the unparalleled beauty of that adorable foe? Cruel remembrance! rather recall to my view the particulars of what then happened, that, incensed by such a manifest injury, I may take vengeance, if not upon her, at least upon my own life. But you, gentlemen, must be tired with these digressions; though my misfortune is such as neither can, nor ought to be superficially or succinctly related; because every circumstance, in my opinion, requires a full discussion.’ The curate answered, ‘that, far from being tired, they were very much entertained by those minute particulars, which he thought deserved as much attention as the principal events of the story.

‘I say then,’ resumed Cardenio, ‘that the parties being assembled in the hall, the curate of the parish entered, and taking them both by the hands, in order to perform his function, he said, “Madam Lucinda, are you willing to take Don Fernando here present for your lawful spouse, as holy mother church ordains?” At this question, I trust out my whole head and neck from behind the tapestry, and, with the utmost attention and disorder of soul, listened to Lucinda’s answer, which I expected, as either the sentence of my death or confirmation of my life.—

O that

O that I had boldly advanced, and called aloud, "Ah Lucinda! Lucinda! take care what you do; reflect upon your duty to me; remember you are mine, and can never belong to any other husband. Consider, that my life must end the moment you answer yes.—Ha! treacherous Don Fernando! robber of my glory! death of my life! what are thy intentions! What wouldst thou have! remember that, as a Christian, thou canst not fulfil thy desires; for I am Lucinda's husband, and she is my lawful wife!" —Fool that I am! now, when I am absent, and far removed from the danger, I can reflect upon what I ought to have done. Now that I am robbed of all that was dear to my soul! accursed be the robber, on whom I might have taken vengeance, had my heart supplied me with courage, as it now affords inclination to complain. In fine, as I then acted like a booby and a coward, it is but reasonable that I should now die of madness, sorrow, and shame. The priest waited for the reply of Lucinda, who declined it a good while; and when I expected she would either unsheath her dagger to vindicate her love, employ her tongue in the cause of truth, or utter some ingenious fraud that should tend to my advantage, I heard her pronounce with a weak and faltering voice, "Yes, I will." Don Fernando repeated the same words, and the ring being put upon her finger, they were united in the indissoluble bond of marriage; then he embraced his new-married spouse, who laying her hand on her heart, fainted away in the arms of her mother. It now remains to describe my own situation, when I heard and saw my hopes thus baffled by Lucinda's breach of promise; and found myself rendered incapable of ever retrieving the happiness I had that instant lost. I remained without sense or reflection, abandoned, as I thought, by Heaven, and a declared enemy to that earth on which I lived. The air refused breath for my sighs, the water denied moisture for my tears; fire alone increased within me, in such a degree, that I was scorched with jealousy and rage! Lucinda's swooning threw the whole company into confusion; and her mother
opening

opening her breast to give her air, found in it a folded paper, which Don Fernando taking, read by the light of one of the torches, and then sat down in a chair, and leaned one side of his head upon his hand, in a pensive attitude, without minding the remedies they were applying for the recovery of his spouse.

I, seeing the whole family in confusion, ventured to come out, cost what it would; resolving, should I be seen, to do some desperate action, that would convince the whole world of my just indignation, in chastising the false Don Fernando, and the fickle, fainting traitress. But fate, that reserved me, if possible, for greater misfortunes, ordained that I should then abound in reflection, which hath since failed me; and resolve, rather than take vengeance upon my greatest enemies, who, as they had no suspicion of me, were then at my mercy, to turn upon myself that resentment which they so justly deserved to feel; and, perhaps, with more rigour than I should have exercised upon them, had I at that time sacrificed them to my rage, because sudden death is infinitely more easy than that which is lengthened out by lingering torments. In short I quitted the house, and went to the place where I had left my mule, which being saddled, I mounted her, and, without taking leave of my host, sallied out of town, dreading, like another Lot, to look behind me. When I found myself alone in the open field, shrouded by the darkness of the night, and invited by the silence to complain, without caution or fear of being overheard or known, I raised my voice, and gave a loose to my indignation, in venting curses upon Lucinda and Don Fernando, as if those vain exclamations could have atoned for the injury they had done me. I bestowed upon her the epithets of cruel, false, perfidious, and ungrateful; but, above all, avaricious; since the wealth of my rival had shut the eyes of her love, detached her from me, and swayed her inclination towards him to whom fortune had shewn herself more kind and liberal. Yet, in the midst of these reproaches and invectives, I could not help excusing her, observing, it was no wonder, that

that a damsel, educated under restraint, in the house of her parents, bred up, and always accustomed to obey them, should comply with their will and pleasure, in marrying a young gentleman of such wealth, rank, and qualifications, that her refusal might have been thought to proceed either from want of sense, or a passion for some other man, which would have been a suspicion equally prejudicial to her virtue and reputation: then I argued on the other side of the question; saying, had she owned that I was her husband, her parents would have seen she had not committed an unpardonable crime in making such a choice; since, before the offer of Don Fernando, they themselves could not have desired, had their desires been bounded by reason, a better match than me for their daughter; and consequently, before she complied with their compulsive injunction of giving her hand to another, she might have told them that she had already given it to me; in which case, I would have appeared, and confirmed the truth of every thing she should have feigned for the occasion; in fine, I concluded, that superficial love, slender understanding, vast ambition, and thirst after grandeur, had obliterated in her memory those professions by which I had been deceived, cherished, and supported, in the unshaken hope of my honourable desires.

‘In this exclamation and anxiety, I travelled all night; and in the morning found myself in one of the passages to this mountain, in which I proceeded three days more, without high-road or bye-path, till I stopped at a small meadow, that lies either on the right or left of these rocks there I enquired of some goatherds whereabouts the most craggy part of the mountain was; and, according to their directions, thither I rode, resolving to put an end to my life. When I arrived among these ragged rocks, my mule fell down dead of weariness and hunger; or, as I rather believe, to disencumber herself of such a useless load as then burdened her; and I remained on foot, quite spent and famished, without having or desired any support. In this situation,

on,

on, I know not how long I continued stretched upon the ground: but, at length, I got up without feeling any cravings of hunger, and found myself in the midst of some shepherds, who, doubtless, had relieved my necessity. Indeed, they told me in what condition I had been found, uttering such incoherent and extravagant expressions, as clearly demonstrated that I had lost my senses. Since that time, I have frequently perceived my intellects so crazy and unsound, that I perform a thousand mad actions, tearing my cloaths, bellowing thro' these unfrequented places, cursing my fate, and repeating in vain the beloved name of my fair enemy, without any connected sentences, or indeed any other intent than that of putting an end to my life by violent outcries; and when I recover the use of my senses, I find myself so weak and exhausted, that I scarce can move. My usual habitation is the hollow of a cork tree, large enough to contain this miserable carcase; the cow and goatherds, who frequent these mountains, maintain me out of charity, by leaving food upon the road, or rocks, on which they think I may chance to find it; and, even while I am deprived of my understanding, natural instinct teaches me to distinguish this necessary nourishment, awakening my appetite and desire of seizing it for my use. They tell me, too, when they meet with me in one of my lucid intervals, that at other times I sally out by the highway, and take it by force from the shepherds, as they are bringing it from their cots, although they offer it of their own accord. In this manner I lead my woeful and wretched life, until Heaven shall be pleased to put a period to it, or give me grace to forget the beauty and falshood of Lucinda, together with the wrong I have suffered from Don Fernando. If this shall happen before I die, my intellects will return into their right channel; otherwise there is nothing to be done, but to supplicate Heaven to have mercy on my soul; for I find I have neither virtue nor strength to extricate myself out of this extremity, into which I was voluntarily plunged.

‘ This

' This, gentlemen, is the bitter story of my misfortune ; tell me if you think it could be rehearsed with less concern than I have shewn ; and pray give yourselves no trouble in offering to me such persuasions and advice, as your reason prompts you to think will do me service ; for they can have no other effect upon me, than the prescription of a celebrated physician upon a patient who will not receive it. I will have no health without Lucinda ; and since she who is, or ought to be, mine, hath attached herself to another, I, who might have been the child of happiness, am now the willing votary of woe. She, by her inconstancy, wants to fix my perdition ; and I welcome it, in order to gratify her desire, and be an example to posterity, of one who wanted that consolation which almost all the wretched use ! namely, the impossibility of receiving comfort ; a consideration that increases my misery, which, I fear, will not end even with death.

Thus did Cardenio wind up the long thread of his amorous and unfortunate story ; and just as the curate was about to give him his best advice and consolation, he was prevented by a voice that saluted his ears, and in mournful accents pronounced what will be rehearsed in the fourth book of this narration ; for, in this place, the third is concluded by the sage and attentive historian Cid Hamet Benengeli.

PART I. BOOK IV.

CHAPTER I.

Of the new and agreeable Adventure that happened to the Curate and Barber in the Brown Mountain.

THREE happy and fortunate was that age which produced the most auspicious knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, in consequence of whose

VOL. II.

G

honourable

honourable resolution to restore and revive the lost, and, as it were, buried, order of knight-errantry, we of these times, barren and unfruitful of sprightly amusements, enjoy the agreeable entertainment, not only of his own true and delightful adventures, but also the intervening episodes, which are no less real, arisul, and delicious, than the main history itself, the twisted, reeled, and revelled thread of which is continued thus!

Just as the curate was ready to offer some consolation to Cardenio, he was prevented by a voice that saluted his ears in these mournful accents: 'Would to God I could find a place to serve as a private tomb for this wearisome burden of life, which I bear so much against my inclination! this very spot will yield me what I ask, if I can trust the solitary appearance of these mountains. Alas! how much more agreeable is the company of these rocks and thickets, which give me opportunities of complaining to Heaven, than that of faithless man! since nature has not created one of whom I could reasonably expect advice in difficulty, comfort in affliction, or remedy in distress!'

This exclamation was distinctly overheard by the priest and his company, who, concluding that the person who spoke must be hard by, arose to make farther enquiry, and had not gone twenty paces, when, behind the fragment of a rock, they perceived a boy sitting under an ash-tree, in the habit of a peasant, whose face, as he stooped, in order to wash his feet in a brook that murmured by him, they could not then survey. Their approach they managed with softness and silence, while his whole attention was employed in bathing his legs, that seemed two crystal pillars, which had been produced among the pebbles in the rill. They were surprized at the whiteness and beauty of his feet, which they could not believe had been formed to tread the clods, and follow the cattle or plough, as his dress would have seemed to intimate; and the curate, who went foremost, finding himself still unperceived by the youth, made signs to the rest to crouch





DON QUIKOTE.

Dorothea discovered by Cardenio and the Goats.
 Walking her goat in a Brook on the Brown Mountain.

File Vol. II. Part 1. Book 1. Chap. 1. p. 72.

crouch down, or hide themselves behind a neighbouring rock. This being done, all three stood gazing attentively at the apparition, which was clad in a double-skirted grey jacket, girt about the middle with a white napkin, and wore breeches and hose of the same cloth, with a grey hunting-cap upon his head; the hose being pulled up to the middle of his leg, which actually seemed of white alabaster. Having washed his delicate feet, he wiped them with a white handkerchief which he took out of his cap, and in so doing, lifted up his head, shewing to the by-standers a face of such exquisite beauty, that Cardenio said in a whisper to the curate, 'Since that is not Lucinda, it can be no earthly, but some celestial being!' The youth taking off his cap, and shaking his head, a large quantity of hair, that Apollo himself might envy, flowed down upon his shoulders, and discovered to the spectators, that the supposed peasant was no other than a woman, the most delicate and handsome that the curate and barber had ever beheld; or even Cardenio, had he not seen and been acquainted with Lucinda, who alone, as he afterwards owned, could contend with her in beauty. Her golden locks fell down in such length and quantity, as not only covered her shoulders, but also concealed every other part of her body except her feet: and, instead of a comb, she made use of her hands, which, if her feet looked like crystal in the brook, appeared among her hair like moulds of drifted snow. All these circumstances encreasing the desire of the by-standers to know who she was, they resolved to shew themselves; and at the stir they made in advancing, the beautiful phantom raised her head, and parting her locks with both hands, to see what occasioned the noise she heard, no sooner perceived them, than she started up, and, without staying to put on her shoes, or tie up her hair, seized a bundle that lay by her, and betook herself to flight, full of consternation and surprise: but she had not run six yards, when her delicate feet, unable to bear the roughness of the stones, failed under her, and she fell to the

ground. This accident being perceived by the other three, they ran to her assistance, and the curate approaching her first. 'Stay, Madam, said he, 'who-soever you are; those whom you see have no other design than that of doing you service: therefore there is no necessity for your attempting such a precipitate flight, which neither your own feet nor our inclination will allow.' To this address she made no reply, being quite astonished and confused; but the priest taking her by the hand, proceeded in this manner: 'Madam, though your dress concealed, your hair hath discovered manifest signs, that it must be no slight cause which hath shrouded your beauty in such unworthy disguise, and brought you to this solitude, where it is our fortune to find you; and to offer, if not a certain remedy for your misfortune, at least our best advice; for no grievance can harass or drive the afflicted to such extremity, while life remains, as to make them shut their ears against that counsel which is given with the most humane and benevolent intention. Wherefore, Madam, or Sir, or what you please to be, recollect yourself from the confusion in which the sight of us hath thrown you, and tell us the particulars of your good or evil fortune, in full assurance of finding us all together, or each by himself, disposed to sympathise with your affliction.'

While the curate pronounced these words, the disguised damsel stood wrapt in attention, gazing at them all round, without moving her lips, or uttering one syllable, like a country villager gazing at rarities which he had never seen before: but the priest enforcing what he had said, with other arguments to the same effect, she heaved a profound sigh, and broke silence, saying, 'Since these solitary mountains have not been able to conceal me, and my loose dishevelled hair allows me not to disguise the truth, it would be in vain for me to feign such things as your reason could not believe, though your courtesy might excuse them. On that supposition, I thank you, gentlemen, for your humane offer, which lays me under the obligation of giving
you

you all the satisfaction you desire ; though I am afraid, that the relation I shall make of my misfortunes will, instead of compassion, excite your disgust, for you will find it impossible either to cure my woes, or teach me to bear them with fortitude ; but, nevertheless, that my reputation may not suffer in your opinion, as you have discovered me to be a woman, and a young one, alone, and in this disguise ; circumstances which, considered either together or apart, might prejudice my good name in this world ; I will freely disclose to you those things, which, if possible, I would have willingly concealed.'

All this preamble was uttered in a breath by the beautiful apparition, with such volubility of tongue, and sweetness of voice, that they admired her good sense as much as her beauty ; and repeating their proffers of service, as well as their entreaties that she would perform her promise ; she, without farther importunity, put on her shoes with great modesty, adjusted her hair, and sat down in the midst of her three hearers, upon a seat in the rock, where, after having endeavoured to repress a few tears that started in her eyes, she, with a clear and deliberate voice, began the story of her life in this manner.

' In this province of Andalusia, there is a place, from whence a certain duke, one of those who are called grandees of Spain, derives his title : he hath two sons, the eldest of whom is heir to his estate, and in all appearance, to his good qualities ; but the younger inherits nothing that I know, but the treachery of Vellido, and falsehood of Galalon. To this nobleman my parents are vassals ; and though low in pedigree, so considerable in wealth, that, if their descent was equal to their fortune, they would have nothing more to desire, nor I the mortification of seeing myself in this distress ; for I believe, my misfortunes proceed from their defect in point of birth, which, though not so mean as to make them ashamed of their origin, is not splendid enough to overthrow my conjecture about the source of my affliction : in short, they are farmers, of a plain honest,

nest family, without the least intermixture of Moorish blood ; but, as the saying is, old, rusty Christians ; aye, and so rusty, that, by their riches and opulent way of living, they are gradually acquiring the title of gentlefolks, nay, of quality too ; though what they prized above all riches and title, was their happiness in having me for their daughter ; and therefore, as they had no other child to inherit their estate, and were naturally the most affectionate of parents, I was beloved and indulged by them with the utmost degree of parental fondness. I was the mirror in which they beheld themselves, the staff of their age, and shared with Heaven their whole attention and desires, with which, as they were pure and unblemished, my own perfectly corresponded ; and therefore, I was mistress of their affection as well as their wealth. By my advice, they received and dismissed their servants ; the tale and account of what was both sowed and reaped, passed through my hands ; I managed the oil-mills, the vineyards, the herds and the flocks, the beehives, and every thing that such a rich farmer as my father may be supposed to possess : in short, I was steward and mistress ; and acted with such care and economy, that I should not find it easy to exaggerate the pleasure and satisfaction which my parents enjoyed. Those parts of the day that remained, after I had given all due attention to the herdsmen, overseers, and other day-labourers, I employed in exercises equally decent and necessary for young women, such as lace-making, needlework, and spinning ; and if, at any time, I interrupted these employments, in order to recreate the mind, I entertained myself with some religious book, or diversified my amusement with the harp ; being convinced by experience, that music lulls the disordered thoughts, and elevates the dejected spirits. Such was the life I led in my father's house ; and if I have described it too minutely, it is not through ostentation, in order to display our riches, but with a view of manifesting how innocently I forfeited that happy situation, and incurred the misery
of

of my present state. While I passed my time in these occupations, my retirement was such as almost equalled that of a nunnery, being seen by nobody, as I thought, but the servants of the family ; for I went to mass early in the morning, accompanied by my mother and the maids, and veiled with such reserve, that my eyes scarce beheld the ground on which I trod ; yet, nevertheless, I was perceived by those of love, or rather libertinism, which even exceeds the lynx in penetration, and then possessed the faculties of Don Fernando, younger son of the duke whom I have already mentioned.

She no sooner mentioned the name of Don Fernando, than Cardenio changed colour, and began to sweat with such agitation, that the curate and barber, perceiving it, were afraid he would be seized with one of those fits of distraction which, as they had heard, assaulted him from time to time ; but, after some drops of sweat had burst out upon his skin, he remained quiet, and looking earnestly at the farmer's fair daughter, immediately guessed who she was ; while she, without observing the emotions of Cardenio, went on with her story, in these words : ' And he no sooner beheld me, than, as he afterwards protested, he deeply felt the power of love, which indeed his behaviour clearly evinced ; but, to shorten the account of my misfortune, which is lengthened beyond all comfort, I will pass over in silence the industrious schemes that Don Fernando planned, for opportunities of declaring his passion. He bribed every servant in the family, and even made presents and proffers of service to my relations ; there was nothing but gaiety and rejoicing all day long in our street ; and all night, it was impossible to sleep for serenades. The letters which, through an unknown channel, came to my hand, were without number, filled with the most amorous flights and professions, and vows and promises in every line ; but all these efforts, far from soothing, hardened me against him, as much as if he had been my mortal foe ; and all the stratagems he practised, in order to subdue my coyness, had a quite contrary effect ; not that

that I was disgusted at the gallantry of Don Fernando, or enraged at his importunities, for I felt a certain kind of pleasure in being courted and beloved by such a noble cavalier; neither did I take umbrage at seeing myself praised in his letters; for it is my opinion, that all women, let them be never so homely, are pleased to hear themselves celebrated for beauty; but, to all these artifices, I opposed my own virtue, together with the repeated advices of my parents, who plainly perceived the passion of Don Fernando, because he himself took no care to conceal it from the world. They assured me, that in my virtue and prudence alone they confided and deposited their own honour and reputation: they bade me consider the inequality between Don Fernando and me, which was a convincing proof that his love, though he himself asserted the contrary, tended more to his gratification than my advantage; and said, if I could throw any obstruction in his way, to make him quit his unjust pretensions, I should be married immediately, according to my own choice, either to one of the principal persons of our own town, or to some gentleman in the neighbourhood, as I had abundance of lovers, attracted by their wealth and my reputation. With these assurances, the truth of which I could not doubt, I fortified my integrity, and would never send any reply to Don Fernando, that could in the most distant manner flatter him with the hope of accomplishing his wish: but all my reserve, which he ought to have looked upon as the effect of disdain, served only to whet his libidinous appetite, which is the true name of the passion he professed; for, had it been genuine love, you would not now be listening to my story, which I should have had no occasion to recount.

‘In fine, Don Fernando got notice that my parents intended to bestow me in marriage, that they might deprive him of all hope of possessing me, or, at least, provide me with more guards to protect my virtue; and this piece of news alarmed him so much, that he put in practice an expedient to retard the
dreaded

dreaded match. One night, while I sat in my apartment, attended by my maid only, the doors being all fast locked, that through negligence my virtue might not be in danger, without knowing or comprehending the means of his conveyance, he appeared before me, in the midst of this reserve, precaution, solitude, silence, and retreat ! At sight of him, I was so much confounded, that the light forsook my eyes, and my tongue denied it's office ; so that being deprived of the power of utterance, I could not cry for help ; neither, I believe, would he have suffered me to exclaim ; for he instantly seized me in his arms, my confusion being such, that I had not strength to defend myself, and began to pour forth such protestations, that I cannot conceive how falsehood is able to ape truth so exactly. The traitor's tears gave credit to his words, and his sighs confirmed the honesty of his intention. I, being a poor young creature by myself, altogether unexperienced in those affairs, began, I know not how, to believe his false professions ; but, not so as to be moved to weak compassion, either by his vows or artful sorrow ; on the contrary, my first surprize being over, I recollected my dissipated spirits, and with more courage than I thought myself possessed of, said to him, " Signior, if, instead of being within yours arms, as I now am, I was in the paws of a fierce lion, and my deliverance entirely depended upon my doing or saying any thing prejudicial to my virtue, it would be as impossible for me to comply with these terms, as it is impossible for that which is to lose it's existence ; wherefore, though you keep my body confined within your arms, I am in full possession of my soul, with all her chaste desires, which are entirely opposite to yours, as you will plainly perceive, if you resolve to proceed in gratifying your wishes by force. I am your vassal, but not your slave ; the nobility of your blood neither has, nor ought to have, the power of dishonouring or despising the lowliness of mine ; and my character is as precious to me, though I am but a plebeian farmer's daughter, as yours can be to you,
who

who are a nobleman and cavalier. All your strength shall not effect your purpose; neither am I to be influenced by your riches, deceived by your words, or melted by your sighs and tears. Any of these expressions in a man, to whom my parents should give me in marriage, would gain my consent and reciprocal inclination; nay, if my honour were safe, I could sacrifice my satisfaction, and voluntarily yield what you, Signior, now attempt to obtain by force; this I observe, that you may rest assured, I will never grant any favour to him who is not my lawful spouse."

"If that be your sole objection, charming Dorothea," (for that is the name of this wretched creature) said the perfidious cavalier, "behold I here present my hand, in pledge of being yours for ever; and may Heaven, from which nothing is concealed, together with that image of the blessed Virgin, bear witness to the sincerity and truth of this declaration!" Cardenio, when she called herself Dorothea, was surprized anew, and was confirmed in his first conjecture; but, unwilling to interrupt the story in which he expected to hear the issue of what he already knew, he only said, 'Is your name Dorothea, Madam? I have heard of one of that name, to whose misfortunes yours bear a great resemblance: but pray proceed; the time will come when I shall tell you such things as will equally excite your terrors and affliction.' Dorothea, surprized at the discourse of Cardenio, as well as at his strange and ragged attire, intreated him, if he knew any thing of her affairs, to communicate it immediately: saying, that if fortune had left her any thing of value, it was the courage to endure any disaster that might befall her; though she was almost certain, that what she had already suffered could admit of no addition. 'Madam,' replied Cardenio, 'I would not be the means of impairing that fortitude, by telling you what I know, if my conjecture be right; neither is there any opportunity lost, nor is it of any consequence to you, whether you hear it or not.'—'Be that as it will,' answered Dorothea, 'I will go on with the sequel'

quel of my story. Don Fernando, addressing himself to the image he found in my apartment, invoked the blessed Virgin to bear witness to our nuptials, and avowed himself my husband with the most binding and solemn oaths; though, before he proceeded so far, I desired him to reflect upon what he was going to do, and consider how much his father might be incensed at his conduct, when he should find him married to the daughter of his own farmer and vassal. I cautioned him against being blinded by my beauty, such as it was, telling him it would be far from being a sufficient excuse for his error; and begged, if he had any love and regard for me, he would manifest it, in leaving me to a fate more adequate to my rank and circumstances; observing, that such unequal matches were seldom blessed with a long duration of those raptures with which they begin.

‘All these reflections I repeated to him, with many more which I do not remember; but they had no effect in diverting him from the prosecution of his purpose; for he was like a man, who, in making a bargain, never boggles at the price of the commodity, because he never intends to pay it. At the same time, I held a short conference with my own breast, saying within myself, “Neither shall I be the first, who, by marriage, has risen from a low station to rank and grandeur; nor will Don Fernando be the first nobleman whom beauty, or rather blind affection, hath induced to share his greatness with a partner of unequal birth. Since, therefore, I neither make a new world nor a new custom, it is but reasonable in me to embrace this honour that fortune throws in my way; and although the affection he professes should not survive the accomplishment of his wish, I shall nevertheless, in the sight of God, remain his true and lawful wife. Besides, should I treat him with disdain, I see, he is determined to transgress the bounds of duty, and avail himself of force; in which case, I shall be dishonoured, and inexcusable in the opinion of those who do not know how innocently I have incurred their censure;”

sure ; for where shall I find arguments to persuade my parents, that this cavalier entered my apartment without my knowledge and consent ?”

‘ All these reflections, which my imagination revolved in an instant, began to sway me towards that which (though I little thought so) proved my ruin ; especially when aided and enforced by the oaths of Don Fernando, the powers he called to witness, the tears he shed, and, in short, by his genteel carriage and agreeable disposition, accompanied by such marks of real passion, as might have melted any other heart as soft and unexperienced as mine. I called my maid to be a joint evidence with the powers of Heaven : Don Fernando repeated and confirmed his oaths ; took other saints to witness his integrity ; imprecated a thousand curses on his head, in case he should fail to fulfil his promise ; had recourse to sighs and tears again, straining me still closer in his arms, from which he had never released me. By these means, and the departure of my maid, I forfeited that name, and he became a false and finished traitor.

‘ The morning that succeeded this night of my misfortune, did not arrive so soon, I believe, as Don Fernando could have wished ; for, when once a man hath satisfied his rage of appetite, his chief inclination is to quit the scene of his success. This I observe, because Don Fernando seemed impatient to be gone ; and, by the industry of my maid, who had conducted him to my chamber, found himself in the street before day : when he took his leave, he told me, though not with such violence of rapture as he expressed on his first coming, that I might depend upon his honour, and the sincerity of the oaths he had sworn ; as a farther confirmation of which, he took a ring of value from his finger, and put it upon mine. In short, he vanished, leaving me in a situation which I can neither call joyful nor sad. This I know, that I remained in a state of confusion and perplexity, and, as it were, beside myself, on account of what had happened ; but I either wanted courage or memory to quarrel with my maid for the perfidy
she

she had been guilty of, in conducting Don Fernando to my apartment ; indeed, I could not as yet determine, whether the adventure would redound to my advantage or misfortune. I told him at parting, that now I was his wife, he might see me any night, by the same means he had used to procure the first interview, until he should think proper to make our marriage publick : but, except the following night, I could never set eyes on him, either in the street or at church, during a whole month, which I spent in the utmost anxiety of expectation ; although I knew he was in town, and almost every day employed in the chace, an exercise to which he was greatly addicted. Those were doleful and distracting hours and days to me ; for then I began to doubt, and afterwards to disbelieve, the faith of Don Fernando ; then was my maid exposed to those rebukes for her presumption, which she had never heard before ; then was I obliged to husband my tears, and wear composure on my countenance, that I might not give occasion to my parents to ask the cause of my discontent, and be put to the trouble of inventing falsehoods to deceive them. But all this constraint was banished by an event, the knowledge of which trod down all other respects, put an end to all my prudent measures, and, by destroying my patience, published my misfortune to the world. This was no other than a report that soon after prevailed in our town, by which I learned that Don Fernando was married, in a neighbouring city, to a young lady of exceeding beauty, and distinguished birth, though her parents could not give her a portion suitable to such a noble alliance. I understood her name was Lucinda, and that several surprizing accidents had happened at their nuptials.'

Cardenio hearing Lucinda's name, though he said nothing, shrugged up his shoulders, bit his lips, contracted the skin of his forehead, and discharged from his eyes two fountains of tears ; but notwithstanding, Dorothea continued her story, saying, ' This melancholy piece of news no sooner reached my ears, than, instead of freezing, it inflamed my heart with

such rage and fury, that I had well-nigh run out into the streets, and published aloud the falshood and treachery he had practised upon me : but my rage was restrained for that time, by a plan which I conceived, and actually put in execution that very night. I dressed myself in this garb, which I received from one of the swains belonging to the house, to whom I disclosed my whole misfortune, intreating him to attend me to the city, where I understood my adversary was. After having disapproved of the attempt, and blamed my resolution, seeing me determined, he offered to keep me company, as he said, to the world's end : that moment I packed up my woman's dress in a pillow-case, together with some jewels and money, as a resource in time of need ; and in the dead of that very night, without giving the least hint to my perfidious maid, left my father's house, and accompanied by my servant, and a thousand strange imaginations, set out for the city on foot, winged with the desire of finding Don Fernando ; and resolved, though I could not prevent what was already done, to demand with what conscience he had done it.

‘ In two days and an half I arrived at the city, and enquiring for the House of Lucinda's parents, the first person to whom I put the question, told me more than I desired to hear. He directed me to the house, and related every incident which had happened at his daughter's wedding ; a story so publick, that it was the common town-talk. He said, that on the night of their nuptials, after she had pronounced the “ Yes,” by which he became her husband, Lucinda was seized with a violent fit ; that Don Fernando opened her breast to give her fresh air, found in it a paper written with her own hand, importing that she could not lawfully espouse Fernando, being already the wife of Cardenio, who, as the man told me, was one of the principal cavaliers of that town ; and that she had now pronounced the fatal “ Yes,” merely because she would not swerve from the obedience she owed to her parents ; in short, he said, the contents of the paper plainly gave them to understand, that she intended to make away with herself,

herself, immediately after the ceremony, induced by the reasons which were there contained ; and this resolution was confirmed by a poignard which they found concealed in some part of her dress. Don Fernando perceiving by what happened, that Lucinda had baffled, scorned, and undervalued his addresses, ran to her before she had recovered the use of her senses, and, with the poignard they had found, would have stabbed her to the heart, had he not been prevented by her parents and the rest of the company. It was, moreover, reported that Don Fernando immediately retired ; and that Lucinda continued in a fit till next day. When she recovered from her swoon, she declared to her father and mother, that she was the true and lawful wife of the same Cardenio, who, it seems, was present at the ceremony ; and who, when he saw her actually married, contrary to his former belief and firm expectations, quitted the city in despair, having first left a writing that declared the wrong she had done him, and signified his intention to banish himself for ever from the society of mankind. All this transaction was so notorious and public in the city, as to furnish discourse for every body ; and the subject was not diminished, when it was known that Lucinda was not to be found either in her father's house, or in any other part of the town, which were searched all over by her parents who had almost run distracted, not knowing what other method they should take to retrieve her. This information revived my hopes a little ; for I was better pleased to have missed Don Fernando, than to have found him married to another ; thinking, that every gate of comfort was not yet shut against me ; and that Heaven, perhaps, had thrown that impediment in the way of his second marriage, with a view of making him reflect upon what he owed to the first ; and reminding him of his being a Christian, consequently more interested in the care of his soul than in any other human concern. All these things I revolved in my imagination ; and, as I had no real comfort, consoled myself with the most feeble and distant hope, in order to support a life which I now abhor.

‘ While I remained in this city, undetermined what course to take, as I could not find Don Fernando, I heard a public crier describe my person and dress, and offer a considerable reward to any one that should discover where I was. Nay, it was said, that I had seduced from my father’s house, the young man who attended me; a circumstance that touched me to the very soul: finding my credit fallen so low, that they were not satisfied with publishing my escape, but must needs also mention my attendant, a creature so mean and unworthy of my attention and regard, as soon as I heard myself proclaimed, I quitted the town, accompanied by my servant, who already began to give marks of staggering in his promised faith and fidelity, and that night reached the most woody part of this mountain, urged by the fear of being discovered; but, as it is commonly observed, one mischance invites another, and the end of one misfortune is often the beginning of a worse, this was literally my case: my trusty servant, who had hitherto behaved with such zeal and fidelity, seeing me in this solitary place, and instigated by his own villainy rather than any beauty of mine, attempted to avail himself of the opportunity which he thought this desert offered; and with great impudence, contempt of Heaven, and disregard to me, began to talk of love; when, finding that I rejected his immodest proposals with just indignation and disdain, he laid aside intreaties for the use of those who might please to use them, and began to employ force for the accomplishment of his will; but, just Heaven, who seldom or never abandons the righteous intention, favoured and assisted mine so effectually that, with the little strength I have, and no great trouble, I pushed him over a precipice, unknowing whether or not he survived the fall; then, as nimbly as my weariness and terror would allow, I penetrated farther into the mountain, without any other thought or intention, than that of keeping myself concealed from my father, and those whom he had employed to find me out.

‘ I know not how many months I have lived in this place, where I met with a grazier, who took me into his service, and carried me to his house, which stands in the very heart of the mountain. Him I served all this time, in quality of a cow-herd, endeavouring to be always in the field, that I might the more easily conceal that hair which now so unexpectedly discovered my sex : yet, all my care and industry were vain ; for my master having found me out to be a woman, was seized with the same desire that took possession of my own servant. But fortune, with the evil, does not always send the remedy ; for, I could neither find rock nor bog, by which I might have disabled by master, as I had before punished my my man ; and therefore, as the least inconvenience, I have left his house, and chosen to hide myself again among these thickets, rather than try my strength against him, in defence of my innocence. I say, I returned to these woods in hopes of finding a place in which I might, without impediment, implore Heaven with sighs and tears, to have compassion upon my misery, and give me industry and grace to overcome it, or quit my being in this solitude, without leaving behind me the least trace or remembrance of this forlorn wretch, who, without any fault of her own, hath afforded so much matter for conversation and censure both at home and abroad.

CHAPTER II.

Of the beautiful Dorothea's Discretion, with other pleasant and entertaining Particulars.

THIS, gentlemen, is the genuine detail of my tragick story ; consider, therefore, and judge whether or not I have sufficient cause to have more sighs than I have vented, utter more complaints than you have heard, and shed more tears than have flowed from mine eyes : and when you shall have deliberated upon the quality of my misfortune, you will perceive how vain all consolation must be, as the disease admits of no remedy. I only ask what you easily can, and ought to grant, namely, that you would inform me where I can pass my life, without being

being harrassed by the surprize or ear of being found by those who are in search of me. For, though I am well assured, that my parents, out of their great love and affection, would receive me again into their favour, such is the shame and confusion I feel at the bare thought of their having altered their opinion to my prejudice, that I would rather conceal myself from their sight for ever, than appear in their presence under the suspicion of having acted contrary to the expectations they entertained from my virtue.' So saying, she left off speaking, and her face was overspread with a blush that plainly denoted the sentiments and confusion of her soul. Those who had heard her story, were equally surprized and afflicted at her misfortune; to which the curate was going to offer some consolation and advice, when Cardenio took her by the hand, saying, 'It seems, then, Madam, you are the beauteous Dorothea, only daughter of Cleonardo the rich!' She was astonished to hear her father's name pronounced by one of such a miserable appearance, (for we have already observed, how wretched Cardenio was cloathed,) and said to him, 'And who are you, brother, who know so well my father's name; which, if I remember aright, I have not once mentioned in the whole course of my unfortunate story?'

'I am,' replied Cardenio, 'that unfortunate man, to whom, as you have observed, Lucinda said she was married. I am that miserable Cardenio, whom the villainy of him who reduced you to your present situation, hath brought to this deplorable condition in which you now see me, ragged, half-naked, destitute of all human comfort, and, which is still worse, deprived of my understanding, except at certain short intervals, that I enjoy by the permission of Heaven. I, Dorothea, am the person who was present at the perfidy of Don Fernando, and heard Lucinda pronounce the fatal "Yes," by which she accepted him for a husband. I am he who wanted resolution to wait the issue of her swoon, or stay and see the result of that paper which was found in her bosom; for, my soul could not sustain the shock
of

of such accumulated misfortune; and therefore, I quitted the house, already abandoned by my patience, and leaving a letter with my host, whom I charged to deliver it into Lucinda's own hand, betook myself to these desarts, with an intention here to finish the life which from that instant I have abhorred as my most inveterate foe. But fate hath not been pleased to grant my wish, contenting itself with having deprived me of my judgment, with a view, perhaps, of reserving me for better fortune; which I begin to hope may proceed from this lucky meeting with you, since, if that which you have recounted be true, as I believe it is, there is a possibility that Heaven may have in store for us both, a more favourable termination of our disasters than we imagine; for, supposing that Lucinda, who is already my wife, as she hath openly declared, cannot be married to Don Fernando, nor he lawfully wed her, being already espoused to you, I think we have reason to hope, that Heaven will one day restore what mutually belongs to us; as it is neither alienated, ruined, nor irretrievable. And since this consolation still remains, sprung from hopes that are not very remote, and founded on expectations which are not the effects of a disordered imagination, I entreat you, Madam, in the purity of your sentiments, to change your present resolution, as I intend to alter mine, and accomodate yourself to the hopes of better fortune; for, I swear upon the faith of a gentleman and a Christian, that I will never abandon you, until I see you in the arms of Don Fernando, whom, if I cannot by reasonable arguments, bring to a true sense of his duty towards you, I will then use that privilege to which every gentleman is intitled, and in single combat demand satisfaction for the injury he has done you, without minding my own wrongs, which I will leave to the vengeance of Heaven, that I may the sooner revenge yours upon earth."

This speech of Cardenio put an end to the surprise of Dorothea, who being at a loss how to thank him for his kind and generous offer, stooped in

in order to kiss his feet, but this piece of condescension he would by no means allow. The priest answering for both, approved of Cardenio's declaration; and, in a particular manner, intreated, advised, and persuaded them, to accompany him to the village where he lived, in order to provide themselves with what they wanted; and there consult some scheme either for finding Don Fernando, or for carrying Dorothea back to her parents, or, in short, for doing that which should seem most necessary and convenient. Cardenio and Dorothea thanked him for his courteous offer, which they immediately embraced; and the barber, who had been silent and attentive all this time, having joined the curate in his compliments and hearty proffers of service, briefly recounted the cause which had brought them thither; namely, the strange madness of Don Quixote; observing, that they were then waiting for the return of his squire, whom they had sent in quest of his master. Cardenio immediately, as if it had been the faint impression of a dream, recollected and related the quarrel which had happened between the knight and him, though he could not remember the cause of the dispute.

At that instant they heard and recognized the voice of Sancho; who, not finding them in the place where he had left them, hallooed aloud; upon which they went to meet him, and enquiring about Don Quixote, were told by the squire, that he found him naked to the shirt, wan, meagre, half-famished, and fighting for his mistress Dulcinea; that when he (Sancho) told him she had commanded him to quit that place, and go immediately to Toboso, where she waited with impatience to see him, he had answered, that he was determined never to appear before her, until he should have performed such achievements as would render him worthy of her favour; and Sancho observed, that if this resolution should hold, it was possible he might never attain to the rank of an emperor, as he was in duty bound, nor even to that of an archbishop, which was the least he could expect. He desired them, therefore, to consider
some

some means of disengaging the knight from his solitude. The priest bade him be under no concern, for they would fall upon a method to remove his master whether he would or no.

Then he explained to Cardenio and Dorothea, the plan they had laid to cure Don Quixote of his madness, or at least bring him back to his own house. This Dorothea no sooner understood, than she told him, that she was more proper than the barber for acting the part of the distressed damsel; especially, as she had cloaths along with her, that would answer the purpose; and bade them trust to her, for representing every part of the character which should be necessary towards the success of their design, for she had read a great many books of chivalry, and was perfectly well acquainted with the stile in which afflicted damsels were wont to beg boons of knights-errant. 'If that be the case,' said the curate, 'let us not delay the execution of our scheme; for, without doubt, Heaven seems to favour my endeavours; not only in opening a door so unexpectedly towards the cure of your misfortunes, but also in making you subservient in facilitating our success.' Dorothea then pulled out of her pillow-case, a gown and petticoat of very rich stuff, with a beautiful green mantelet, and opening a little casket, took out a rich necklace and other jewels, with which she instantly dressed herself to such advantage, that she appeared like a lady of the first rank and fortune. All these, and other ornaments, she said, she had carried off from her father's house, in case of what might happen; though hitherto she had met with no opportunity of using them. Every one present was charmed with her graceful mien, easy deportment, and exceeding beauty; and passed sentence on Don Fernando, as a person of little taste and discernment, for having abandoned such excellence. But the admiration of Sancho was superior to that of all the rest; for he actually thought, and indeed it was true, that in all the days of his life, he had never seen such a beautiful creature; and, accordingly, asked the curate, with great eagerness, who that

that handsome lady was, and what she looked for in these bye places. 'Friend Sancho,' answered the curate, 'that handsome lady, to say no more of her, is heiress, in the direct male line, of the kingdom of Micomicon*, come hither to beg a boon of your master, that he would redress a wrong and grievance done to her by a discourteous giant; for such is the fame and reputation of that excellent knight, Don Quixote, through the whole extent of Guinea, as to induce this princess to come from thence in quest of him.'—'Blessed quest!' cried Sancho, 'and happy finding, say I! especially if my master should be so fortunate as to right the wrong, and redress the grievance, by killing that son of a whore of a giant that your worship mentions; and kill him he certainly will, if they should once meet, provided he be not a phantom; for you must know, my master has no power over phantoms. But one thing, among many others, I must beg of you, Mr. Licentiate, and that is, to put my master out of conceit of an archbishoprick, for I am afraid his inclination leans that way, and advise him to marry this princess out of hand, a match which will make it impossible for him to receive holy orders; and therefore he will the more easily arrive at the seat of empire, and I at the end of my wish. For I have carefully considered the affair, and by my reckoning, I shall not find my account in his being an archbishop, as I am altogether unfit for the church, by reason of my being married; and for me, who have a wife and children, to be petitioning for dispensations to hold livings, would be an endless task. Wherefore, Signior, the point is this: let my master immediately take to wife this same lady, whose name I do not know; for, indeed, I never saw her grace before this blessed minute.' 'She is called the princess Micomicona,' replied the curate, 'because her kingdom being Micomicon, it is plain her name must be Micomicona.' 'Yes, to be sure,' said Sancho; 'I have known several people take a surname and

* As if he had said Ape-land, *mico* signifying an ape.

and addition from the place of their nativity, calling themselves, for example, Pedro d'Alcala, Juna de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid; and I suppose they have the same custom in Guinea, where the queens take their names from the kingdoms they rule.' The priest confirmed Sancho's opinion, and promised to use his utmost influence to promote the marriage of the knight. With this assurance Sancho rested as much satisfied as the other was surprised at his simplicity, when he perceived how carefully he cherished, in his imagination, the same extravagant whims that possessed his master, whom he firmly believed would one day become an emperor.

By this time, Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber's face accommodated with the ox's tail by way of a beard, they desired Sancho to guide them to the place where Don Quixote was, and cautioned him against pretending to know the licentiate and his companion, assuring him that his master's becoming an emperor entirely depended upon his professing ignorance of their persons. Yet neither the curate nor Cardenio would accompany them; because the presence of this last might recall to the knight's memory the quarrel which had happened between them; and it was not yet proper that the priest should appear; for which reasons, they let the rest proceed by themselves, and they followed at a small distance, after the curate had given her cue to Dorothea; who desired him to make himself perfectly easy on her account, for she would act the part assigned to her, without the least occasion for a prompter, in the true stile and spirit of knight errantry.

Having travelled about three quarters of a league, they discovered Don Quixote already clothed, though still unarmed, sitting in the midst of a labyrinth of rocks; and Dorothea no sooner understood it was he, in consequence of Sancho's information, than she whipped up her palfrey, close attended by the well-bearded barber, who, when she approached the knight, threw himself from his mule, and ran to help his lady to alight. But she, dismounting with
great

great agility, went and fell upon her knees before Don Quixote, whom, in spite of his repeated endeavours to raise her, she accosted in these words :

‘ Never will I rise from this posture, most valiant and invincible knight, until your benevolence and courtesy grant me a boon, which will not only redound to the honour and applause of your own person, but also to the advantage of the most injured and disconsolate damsel that ever the sun beheld ; and if the valour of your mighty arm corresponds with the voice of your immortal fame, you are obliged to favour the unfortunate, who, attracted by the odour of your celebrated name, come from far distant regions, in quest of your assistance.’ — ‘ Beauteous lady,’ replied Don Quixote, ‘ I will not answer one word ; nor hear one circumstance of your affairs, until you rise from the ground.’ — ‘ I will not rise, Signior,’ answered the afflicted damsel, ‘ until I shall have obtained from your condescension, the boon I beg.’ — ‘ I condescend and grant it,’ resumed the knight, ‘ provided in so doing, I act neither to the detriment or derogation of my king, my country, and her who holds my heart and liberty*.’ — ‘ Your compliance, worthy Signior,’ replied the mourning lady, ‘ shall in no ways affect the exceptions you have made.’

At that instant Sancho came up, and whispered softly in his master’s ear, ‘ Your worship may safely grant

* When a knight had once granted a boon in this manner, it was impossible for him to retract, let the request be never so extravagant. We are told by Joinville, that the queen of St. Lewis, being big with child, and in the utmost terror of falling alive into the hands of the infidels of Damietta in Egypt, fell upon her knees before an old knight turned of fourscore, and conjured him to grant her a boon : the old man having promised to comply, on the faith of his knighthood, she told him the favour she so pressingly solicited, was, that he would cut off her head before she should fall into the hands of the enemy, provided the Saracens should become masters of the town. The senior answered without hesitation, that she might depend upon his sword ; and owned he had taken that resolution even before she had signified her request.

grant the boon she asks, which is a mere trifle ; no more than slaying a giantish sort of a fellow ; and she who begs it, is the high and mighty princess Micomicona, queen of the great empire of Micomicon in Ethiopia.'—'Whosoever she is,' answered Don Quixote, 'I will do what I am in duty bound to perform, and act according to the dictates of my own conscience, and conformable to the order I profess.'—Then turning to Dorothea, 'Rise, most beautiful lady,' said he, 'the boon you ask is granted.'—'Then, what I ask is this,' resumed the damsel, 'that your magnanimity would immediately accompany me to the place from whence I came, and promise to attempt no other adventure, nor grant any other request, until you shall have taken vengeance on a traitor who hath usurped my crown, contrary to all right human and divine.'—'I grant your request, Madam,' answered Don Quixote ; 'henceforth you may dispel that melancholy with which you are depressed, and let your fainting hope resume new strength and vigour ; for, with the assistance of God, and this my arm, you shall, in a short time, see yourself restored to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your royal ancestors, in defiance and despite of all those evil-designing persons who mean to oppose you : let us set hands to the work then ; for according to the common observation, Delay breeds danger.'

The distressed damsel struggled with great perseverance, to kiss his hand ; but Don Quixote, who was in all respects a well-bred knight, would by no means allow such humiliation : on the contrary, raising her up, he embraced her with great politeness and cordiality, ordering Sancho to secure Rozinante's girths, and help him to arm with all expedition. The squire, taking down the armour which hung on a tree, in the manner of a trophy, and adjusting the horse's girths, in a twinkling, equipped his master, who finding himself armed, 'Now,' said he, 'let us go, in the name of God, to the assistance of this high-born lady.' The barber, who was all this time on his knees, at infinite pains

to preserve his gravity and his beard, the fall of which, perhaps, would have utterly ruined their laudable design, when he found the boon was granted, and saw with what eagerness the knight undertook to fulfil it, rose up, and with the assistance of Don Quixote, helped his lady upon her mule again; then her protector bestrode Rozinante, and he himself mounted his own beast, while Sancho Panza, being left on foot, felt the loss of Dapple anew: but this he contentedly bore, believing that his master was now in the right road, and almost at the very point of being an emperor; for he assured himself, that the knight would wed that princess, and so become king of Micomicon at least: the only uneasiness he felt, was, on account of that kingdom being in the land of negroes, so that all his servants and vassals must be black; but his imagination supplied him with a remedy for this inconvenience, and he said within himself, 'Suppose my vassals are negroes, what else have I to do, but transport them to Spain, where I can sell them for ready money, with which I may purchase some title or post that will maintain me at my ease all the days of my life! No, to be sure! sleep on, void of all invention or ability to dispose of your ware, and sell thirty, or ten thousand slaves in the turning of a straw! Before God! I'll make them fly, little and big, or just as I may; and, blacks as they are, turn them all into whites and yellows! Let me alone to suck my own fingers.' With these conceits he was so much engrossed, and well satisfied, that he actually forgot the pain of travelling on foot.

Cardenio and the curate saw every thing that passed, from behind some bushes where they were hid, and could fall on no method of joining them conveniently, until the priest, who was an excellent schemer, thought of an expedient for the purpose; having a pair of scissars about him, he cut off the beard of Cardenio with infinite dispatch, and giving him a grey jacket, with his own black cloak, he himself remaining in his doublet and hose, the jattered cavalier was so much altered in point of appearance,

appearance, that he would scarce have known himself had he looked in a glass. Although the others were jogging on, while they disguised themselves in this manner, they easily reached the highway, before the knight and his company, whose beasts were retarded by the bushes and rockiness of the ground; and taking their station just at the mouth of the entrance to the mountain, no sooner perceived the knight and his attendants come forth, than the curate looked earnestly at him a good while, as if he had been recollecting a person whom he knew, then ran to him with open arms, crying aloud, 'Blessed be this meeting with the mirror of chivalry, my worthy compatriot Don Quixote de la Mancha, the flower and cream of gentility, the protector and physician of the distressed, and quintessence of knights-errant!' So saying, he embraced the left knee of Don Quixote; who being astonished at the words and action of the man, began to consider his features with great attention, and at length, recollecting him, was struck dumb with admiration, at seeing him in that place, and made many efforts to alight: which when the priest opposed, 'Give me leave, Mr. Licentiate,' said he, 'it is not seemly that I should remain on horseback, when such a reverend person as you travels on foot.' 'I will by no means,' answered the curate, 'consent to your alighting; since, on horseback, your mighty arm hath achieved the greatest exploits and adventures that this age hath seen; it shall suffice for me, who am but an unworthy priest, to get up, with permission, behind this gentleman who travels in your worship's company; and then I shall imagine myself mounted upon Pegasus, a zebra, or that fiery courser that carried the famous Moor Muzaraque, who still lies enchanted in the vast mountain Zulema, at a little distance from the great Compluto.' I did not think of that expedient, Mr. Licentiate,' replied the knight; 'but I know that my lady the princess will, out of regard to me, be pleased to order her squire to accommodate you with the saddle of his mule, and he himself may ride upon the crupper, if

the beast will carry double' 'I believe she will,' said the princess; 'and I am sure, there will be no occasion to lay my commands upon my squire, who is too courteous and polite, to suffer an ecclesiastic to travel on foot, when it is in his power to provide him with a beast.' 'Your majesty is in the right,' answered the barber; who instantly alighting, complimented the curate with the saddle, which was accepted without much intreaty.

But the misfortune was, when the squire attempted to get up behind, the mule, which was an hireling, consequently mischievous, lifted up her hind legs, and kicked with such fury, that had they lighted on the head or breast of Mr. Nicholas, he would have had reason to curse the hour on which he set out in quest of Don Quixote: such, however, was his confusion, that he came to the ground, and his beard being neglected, fell off; so that he could find no other method to prevent a discovery, than to clap both hands to his face, with great expedition, and roar out that his teeth were demolished. Don Quixote, seeing the huge mass of beard torn from the jaw, without blood, and lying at a good distance from the squire's face 'Good heavens!' cried he, 'what a wonderful phenomenon is this! the beard is taken off and shaved as clean by the heel of the mule, as if it had been done by the hand of a barber.' The curate, seeing the risk he ran of being detected in his scheme, snatched up the tail, and running with it to Mr. Nicholas, who still lay bellowing for help, pulled his head to his breast with one jerk, and clapping it on again, muttered some words, which he said were an infallible charm for fixing on beards, as they should presently see; accordingly, when the affair was adjusted, he quitted the squire, who now seemed as well bearded and as sound as ever; a circumstance that above measure, surprized the knight, who begged that the curate, at a proper opportunity, would impart to him the charm, which he imagined must contain more virtues than that of cementing beards, because it was plain, that where the hair was torn off, the skin and flesh must be lacerated and hurt,

hurt, and if the application could heal those wounded parts, it was good for something more than mere mustachios. The curate confirmed his conjecture, and promised to disclose the secret to him with the first proper opportunity; then it was agreed, that the priest should mount the mule by himself, and, with the other two, ride her by turns, until they should arrive at the inn, which was about two leagues off.

Don Quixote, the princess, and the curate, being thus mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho Panza, following on foot, the knight told the damsel, that her highness might conduct him whithersoever she pleased; but, before she could make any reply, the priest interposed, saying, 'Towards what kingdom is your majesty journeying? I am much mistaken in my notions of kingdoms, if you are not bound for Micomicon?' She, who had been well instructed in her cue, concluding that she must answer in the affirmative, said, 'Yes, Signior, that is the place of my destination.'—'Then you must pass through our village,' answered the curate, 'and take your route to Carthagena, where your highness may happily embark; and if you meet with no hurricane, but be favoured with a fair wind and smooth sea, in something less than nine years, you may get sight of that vast Lake Meona, I mean, Meotis, which is a little more than one hundred days journey from your majesty's kingdom.'—'Your worship must be mistaken,' said the princess, 'for two years are not yet elapsed since I set out from thence; and though the weather has always been bad, I have already obtained what I so much longed after, namely, the sight of Signior Don Quixote de La Mancha, whose fame reached my ears as soon as I landed in Spain, and induced me to come in quest of him, that I might solicit his courtesy, and trust my righteous cause to the valour of his invincible arm.'—'Enough, Madam,' said Don Quixote; 'spare your encomiums; for I am an utter enemy to all sorts of adulation; and although you are not to be suspected of flattery, my chaste ears are always offended at that kind of discourse.'

course. What I can safely affirm, is this: whether I have valour or not, here is he, valiant or pusillanimous, who will exert himself to the last drop of his blood in the service of your highness. But this apart.—Pray, Mr. Licentiate, what cause hath brought you hither alone, where I am really astonished to find you so ill attended, and so slightly clothed?

‘In that particular you shall be soon satisfied,’ answered the curate: ‘your worship must know that I, and our friend Mr. Nicholas the barber, set out for Seville, to recover a sum of money, which was sent to me by a relation of mine that went to the Indies, a good many years ago; no less than sixty thousand pieces of eight in good silver, which make no inconsiderable sum: and yesterday, passing through this place, we were set upon by four highwaymen, who stripped us even to our very whiskers, and that in such a manner as obliged the barber to wear artificial ones; and you may see,’ pointing to Cardenio, ‘how they have despoiled the face of this young man who accompanied us; and the cream of the story is, that, according to the public report, which prevails in this neighbourhood, those who robbed us were galley slaves, that, almost in this very place, were set at liberty by a man so valiant, as to let them all loose, in spite of the commissary and his guards. Without all doubt he must have been deprived of his senses, or as great a villain as any of those he freed, or some person void of all conscience and feeling, who could thus turn loose the wolf among the lambs, the fox among the poultry, and the flies among the honey-pots; defrauding justice, and rebelling against his king and rightful sovereign, by acting contrary to his just commands, in depriving the galleys of their hands, and putting in confusion the holy brotherhood, which have continued so many years in undisturbed repose: in short, he hath done a deed that may tend to the perdition of his own soul as well as body.’

Sancho had before recounted to them the adventure of the galley-slaves, which he had atchieved with so much glory ; and therefore the curate urged it home, in order to observe the behaviour of Don Quixote, who changed colour at every word, without daring to own himself the deliverer of that worthy crew. ' Those,' added the priest, ' were the persons who risked us ; and God of his infinite mercy forgive the man who prevented the punishment they so richly deserved !'

CHAPTER III.

The pleasant Artifice practised to extricate our enamoured Knight from the most rigorous Penance he had imposed upon himself.

SCARCE had the curate pronounced this apostrophe, when Sancho blundered out—' Then, in good faith, Mr. Licentiate, he who performed this exploit, was no other than my master ; not that I neglected to tell and advise him beforehand, to consider what he was about, and think what a sin it would be to let loose those who were going to the gallies for the most grievous enormities.'—' You blockhead,' cried Don Quixote, incensed ' it neither concerns nor belongs to knights-errant, to examine whether the afflicted, the enslaved, and oppressed, whom they meet on the highway, are reduced to these wretched circumstances by their crimes, or their misfortunes ; our business is only to assist them in their distress, having an eye to their sufferings, and not to their demerits. I chanced to light upon a string of miserable and discontented objects, in behalf of whom I acted according to the dictates of my religion, without minding the consequence ; and he who takes umbrage at what I have done, saving the sacred character and honourable person of Mr. Licentiate, is, I insist upon it, utterly ignorant of chivalry, and lies like the base born son of a whore ; and this assertion I will make good with my sword, in the most ample manner.' So saying, he fixed himself in the stirrups, and cocked his beaver ; the barber's bason, which he mistook for Mambrino's helmet,

helmet, hanging useless at the saddle-bow, until the damage it received from the galley-slaves could be repaired.

Dorothea, who was equally prudent and witty, understanding that every body present, except Sancho, diverted themselves with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, was willing to have her share of the entertainment; and accordingly, perceiving his indignation was raised, 'Sir knight,' said she, 'I hope your worship will remember your promise to me, by which you are restricted from engaging in any other adventure, howsoever pressing it may be. Subdue your resentment therefore, and be assured, that had Mr. Licentiate known the galley-slaves were set at liberty by that invincible arm, he would have taken three stitches in his mouth, and bit his tongue three times, rather than have uttered one word that should redound to the prejudice of your worship.'—'That I swear I would have done,' said the curate; 'aye, and have plucked off one of my whiskers to boot.'—'Madam,' answered the knight, 'I am silent. I will restrain the just indignation which begins to rise within me, and proceed in the utmost peace and quiet, until I shall have fulfilled the boon I promised to your highness; but, in recompence for this my kind intention, I beseech you, if it be not too much trouble, to make me acquainted with the nature of your misfortune; and tell me the number, quality, and condition of those persons on whom I am to take just satisfaction and full vengeance, in your behalf.'—'With all my heart,' answered Dorothea; 'though I am afraid of tiring you with a recital of woes and misfortunes.' The knight assured her that would be impossible; and she resumed, 'Well then, be so good as to favour me with your attention.'

At these words, Cardenio and the barber went up close to her, in order to hear what story she, in her discretion, would invent; and Sancho Panza, who was as much deceived as his master, followed their example. After she had seated herself firmly in the saddle, cleared her pipes with a hem or two; and

and made other preliminary gestures, she with great sprightliness thus began :

‘ In the first place, gentlemen, you must know that my name is ———. Here she made a full stop, having forgot how the curate had christened her : but this defect was soon remedied ; for, immediately conceiving the cause of her hesitation, he said, ‘ It is no wonder, Madam, that your highness is disturbed and disordered at the recollection of your misfortunes, which are often so great, as to impair the memory to such a degree, that the afflicted cannot even remember their own names : this effect they have had upon you, Madam, who have forgot that you are the Princess Micomicona, legitimate heiress of the great kingdom of Micomicon. With the assistance of this hint, your highness will easily recal the whole thread of your story to your sorrowful remembrance.’—‘ You are in the right,’ replied the damsel ; ‘ and I believe I shall be able to bring my true narrative to a happy conclusion, without farther prompting.’

‘ The king, my father, whose name was Tinacrio the sage, foresaw, by his profound skill in magic, that my mother, who was called Queen Zaramilla, would die before him ; and that, as he himself must quit this life soon after, I should be left an helpless orphan ; but this consideration, he said, did not give him so much pain and confusion, as the certain foreknowledge that a monstrous giant, lord of a great island that bordered on our kingdom, called Pandafilando of the Gloomy Aspect : (for, it is affirmed, that although his eyes are, like any other person’s, placed in the middle of his face, he always looks askance, as if he squinted ; and this obliquity the malicious tyrant practices, in order to surprize and intimidate those who behold him ;) I say, my father foresaw by his art, that this giant, informed of my being an orphan, would invade me with a great army, and deprive me of my whole kingdom, without leaving so much as a village for my retreat ; and that nothing could prevent this my ruin and misfortune, unless I would consent to marry

marry him ; though, so far as he could learn, it would never come into my thoughts to make such an unequal match ; and truly his conjecture was well founded ; for, it never entered into my head, to wed this giant, or any other person, howsoever tall and unmeasurable he might be. My father, therefore, advised me, that when, after his death, I should get notice that Pandafilando was beginning to invade my kingdom, I should not stay to put myself in a posture of defence, which would prove my destruction, but freely leave him the possession of my realms, if I was resolved to avoid my own death, and to prevent the total destruction of my good and faithful subjects ; for it would be impossible to defend myself against the infernal force of the giant ; but, that I should immediately set out for Spain, where I would find a remedy for all my misfortunes, in the person of a certain knight-errant, whose fame would be at that time spread over the whole kingdom, and whose name, if I right remember, would be Don Hackfot, or Kickfot.’ ‘ Don Quixote, your ladyship would say,’ cried Sancho, interposing, ‘ alias the Knight of the Rueful Countenance.’ ‘ The very same,’ replied Dorothea : ‘ he told me, moreover, that this knight would be a tall man, with a long meagre visage, and have on his right side, below his left shoulder, or thereabouts, a grey mole garnished with hairs, which bear some resemblance to a hog’s bristles.’

Don Quixote hearing this circumstance, said to his squire, ‘ Come hither, son Sancho, and help me to strip ; for I want to see if I am actually the knight of whom that sage king foretold.’—‘ Why should your worship strip ? said Dorothea. ‘ In order to satisfy myself about that mole which your royal father mentioned.’ —‘ You need not give yourself the trouble,’ said Sancho ; ‘ I know your worship hath just such a mole on the middle of your back-bone, which is a sign of strength.’—‘ That assurance is sufficient,’ resumed Dorothea, ‘ for among friends, we ought not to stand upon trifles ; and it is of very little consequence whether the mole

mole be upon the shoulder or the back-bone, provided there is really such a mark on any part of your body, which is all composed of the same flesh. Without doubt my worthy father was right in every thing he prognosticated ; and I have exactly followed his directions, in recommending my cause to the protection of Signior Don Quixote, who is certainly the individual knight my father described ; since his features corresponded with his fame, which fills not only Spain, but likewise the whole province of La Mancha ;* for scarce had I landed at Offuna, than hearing of vast exploits, my mind suggested that he must be the very person I came in quest of.—How could your highness,’ said Don Quixote, ‘ land at Offuna, which is not a sea-port ?

Before she had time to make a reply, the curate took the task upon himself, saying, ‘ The princess must mean, that after she landed at Malaga, Offuna was the first place in which she heard of your worship.’—‘ That was my meaning,’ said Dorothea. ‘ There is nothing more plain,’ answered the priest ; ‘ and now your majesty may proceed.’—‘ I have nothing more to say,’ resumed the princess, ‘ but that at length, destiny has been so favourable to me, in my finding Don Quixote, I reckon and look upon myself as queen again, and mistress of my whole realms, since, out of his great courtesy and magnificence, he hath promised, in consequence of the boon I asked, to go with me whithersoever I shall conduct him ; and my intentions is no other than to bring him face to face with Pandafilando of the Gloomy Aspect, that he may, by putting him to death, restore me to the possession of that which he so unjustly usurps ; and all this will literally happen, as it was prophesied by my father Tinacrio the Sage, who hath also left it written in Chaldean or Greek characters, for I cannot read them, that
if

* This is a diverting example of the Bathos, not unlike that anticlimax repeated in the art of sinking.

Nor Alps, nor Appenines could keep us out,
Nor fortified redoubt !

if the knight mentioned in the prophecy should, after having cut off the giant's head, demand me in marriage, I must instantly accept of him as my lawful husband, without the least hesitation, and give him immediate possession of my person and throne.'

Don Quixote hearing this circumstance, cried, 'What do you think now, friend Sancho? do you hear what passes? and did not I tell thee as much? Observe now, whether or not we have not a queen to marry, and a kingdom to govern.'—'Ad-zookers, it is even so!' cried the squire; 'and plague upon the son of a whore who refuses to marry her, as soon as Mr. Pandahiladoe's weazond is cut; then, what a delicate morsel the queen is! odd, I wish all the fleas in my bed were such as she!' So saying, he cut a brace of capers, with marks of infinite satisfaction; then running up, and taking hold of the bridle of Dorothea's mule, made her halt, while he, falling down on his knees before her, besought the princess to let him kiss her hand, in token of his receiving her as his queen and mistress. Which of the company could behold the madness of the master, and the simplicity of the man, without laughing! Dorothea actually gave him her hand, and promised to make him a grandee, as soon as, by the favour of Heaven, she should be restored to the possession of her kingdom; and he thanked her in terms which redoubled the mirth of all present.

'This, Gentlemen,' added the damsel, 'is my story; and nothing now remains but to tell you, that of all the people who attended me when I left my own country, not one survives, except this well-bearded squire; all the rest having perished in a dreadful storm that overtook us after we were within sight of land: he and I miraculously floated to the shore on two planks: and indeed the whole course of my life, as you may have observed in my narration, hath been full of mystery and wonder. If I have in anything exceeded the bounds of credibility, or been less accurate than I ought, I hope you will impute it to that cause assigned by the licentiate, in the beginning of my story; namely, the continual

tinual and extraordinary affliction, that often impairs the memory of the unfortunate.'—'But, mine shall not be impaired, most high and virtuous lady!' said Don Quixote, 'by all the misfortunes I shall undergo in your service, let them be never so great and unprecedented: therefore I again confirm the boon I have promised, and swear to attend you even to the world's end, until I get sight of that ferocious adversary of yours, whose proud head I hope to slice off, with the assistance of God, my own arm, and the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; thanks to Gines de Passamonte who run away with my own.*' This last apostrophe he muttered between his teeth, and then proceeded aloud, saying—'and after I shall have deprived him of his head, and put you in peaceable possession of your throne, you shall be at free liberty to dispose of your person, according to your own will and pleasure: for, while my memory is engrossed, my will enslaved, and my understanding subjected to her who—I say no more; but, that it is impossible I should incline, or have the least thought towards marrying any other person, though she were a perfect phoenix.'

Sancho was so much disgusted at this last declaration of his master, refusing the marriage, that, raising his voice, he cried with great indignation. 'Signior Don Quixote, I vow and swear, your worship is crazy, else you would never boggle at marrying such a high-born princess as this! Do you imagine that fortune will offer such good luck at every turn, as she now presents? or pray, do you think my Lady Dulcinea more handsome than the princess? I am sure she is not half so beautiful, and will even venture to say, that she is not worthy to tie her Majesty's shoe-strings. How the plague shall I ever obtain the earldom I expect, if your worship goes thus a fishing for mushrooms at sea? Marry her, marry her, in the devil's name, without much ado; lay hold on this kingdom that drops, as

VOL. II.

K

it

* If the knight was robbed of his own sword by Gines, where did he find that which he wore on this occasion?

it were, into your hand; and after your coronation, make me a marquis or lord-lieutenant, and then the devil, if he will, may run away with the rest.'

Don Quixote was enraged when he heard such blasphemies uttered against his mistress Dulcinea, and lifting up his lance, without speaking a syllable, or giving the least notice of his intention, discharged two such hearty blows upon the squire, as brought him instantly to the ground; and had not Dorothea called aloud, and begged of him to forbear, would certainly have murdered poor Sancho on the spot. 'Do you think,' said he, after some pause, 'you plebeian scoundrel, that I always stand with my hands in my pockets; and that there is nothing to be done, but for you to misbehave, and for me to forgive you? I'll teach you better manners, you excommunicated rascal; for such to be sure you are, else you would not wag your tongue against the peerless Dulcinea. Don't you know, you grovelling beggarly villain, that were it not for the valour with which she inspires this arm, I should not have enough to kill a flea? Tell me, you viperish scoffer, what you think hath won this kingdom, cut off the giant's head, and made you a marquis, for all this I look upon as already done and determined? Is it not the valour of Dulcinea that makes use of my arm as the instrument of her exploits? In me she fights and overcomes; in her I live, breathe, and have my being. O thou whoreson, ungrateful ruffian, who see'st thyself raised from the dust of the earth to the rank of nobility, and repayest the obligation by slandering thy benefactress.

Sancho was not so roughly handled but he heard every syllable that his master spoke; and, starting up as nimbly as he could, ran behind Dorothea's palfrey, from whence he said to the knight, 'Pray, Sir, if your worship is determined against marrying this great princess, is it not plain, that the kingdom cannot be yours; and if that be the case, what favours can you bestow upon me? This is what I complain of. I would your worship would, once

for all, marry this queen, who is, as it were, rained down from Heaven upon us; and then you may converse with my Lady Dulcinea, according to the custom of some kings who keep concubines. As to the affair of beauty, I will not intermeddle; but, if the truth may be told, I like them both very well, though I never saw my Lady Dulcinea in my life.'—'How! not seen her, blasphemous traitor!' cried Don Quixote; 'have you not just brought a message from her?'—'I say,' answered Sancho, 'that when I saw her, I had not an opportunity of examining the particulars of her beauty and good qualities one by one; but altogether she pleased me very much.' 'Now, Sancho,' said Don Quixote, 'I exculpate thee, and thou must forgive what I did in my wrath; for no man can command the first emotions of his passion.'—'That I can plainly perceive,' answered the squire, 'and therefore the desire of speaking is always the first motion in me; and truly, when once my tongue begins to itch, I cannot for my blood keep it within my teeth.'—'For all that, friend Sancho,' said the knight, 'I would have you consider before you speak; for, though the pitcher goes often to the well—I need not mention what follows.'—'In good time, replied the squire, 'there is a God above, who sees the snare, and will judge which of us is the most to blame; I in speaking, or your worship in doing evil.'—'Let there be no more of this, Sancho,' said Dorothea, 'but run and kiss your master's hand, and beg his pardon; and henceforth set a better guard upon your praise and disparagement; above all things, beware of saying any thing to the prejudice of that Lady Toboso, whom I know by nothing else than my inclination to serve her: and if you put your trust in God, you will not fail of acquiring some estate, by which you will live like a prince.'

Sancho took her advice, and hanging his head, went to beg a kiss of his master's hand, which was granted with great solemnity of deportment; nay, the knight gave him his blessing also, desiring he

would attend him while he rode on a little before the rest of the company, that he might have a better opportunity of asking a few questions, and conversing with him about affairs of the utmost importance. Sancho obeyed the order; and the two having advanced a good way before the rest, 'Since thy return,' said Don Quixote, 'I have had neither time nor convenience to enquire about many particular circumstances of thy embassy, with the answer thou hast brought: and now that fortune favours us with a fit opportunity, thou must not deny me the pleasure I shall receive from thy agreeable information.'—'Your worship,' answered the squire, 'may ask as many questions as you please: I shall make every thing come out as clear as it went in; but I intreat your worship, dear Sir, not to be so revengeful for the future.'—'Why dost thou call me revengeful?' said the knight. 'Because,' resumed the squire, 'those blows I was just now honoured with were more owing to the quarrel the devil picked between us, t'other night, than to any thing I said against my Lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence as a relick, though she be not one, merely because she appertains to your worship.'—'No more of these reflections, on thy life,' said Don Quixote; 'else thou wilt give me fresh umbrage. I freely forgave thee at that time, and thou knowest, that, according to the common observation, Every new fault deserves a new penance.'

While this conversation passed between them, they perceived a man riding towards them on an ass; and, when he came a little nearer, discerned him to be a gypsie; but Sancho Panza, who sent his soul abroad with his eyes, to examine every ass that appeared, no sooner beheld the rider, than he recognized Gines de Passamonte, and by the thread of the gypsie discovered the clue of his own ass; for it was actually Dapple that carried Passamonte, who, for the better convenience of selling the beast, had disguised himself in the dress of a gypsie, whose language, with many others, he could speak as fluently as his mother-tongue. Sancho saw and recollected him, and no sooner had he seen and recollected him, than
he

he bellowed forth, ' Ah, villain, Ginesillo ! restore my goods ! give me back the comfort of my life ! rob me not of my heart's content ! give me my ass ! give me my darling ! Fly, thief ! skip, robber ! and seek not to preserve that which is none of thy own.'

There was no need of all this exclamation and reproach ; for Gines leaped off at the first word, and at a pretty round trot, which might have passed for a gallop, made the best of his way, and vanished in a twinkling. Sancho running to his ass, embraced it with great affection, saying, ' How hast thou been, my dear Dapple ? my trusty companion and joy of my eyes !' Then kissed and caressed it as if it had been a Christian ; while Dapple very peaceably received these demonstrations of love and kindness, without answering one word. The whole company wished him joy of his recovery ; particularly Don Quixote, who assured him, that although he had retrieved Dapple, the promise of the three colts should not be annulled ; and Sancho thanked him for his generosity.

While the master and man were conversing by themselves, the curate told Dorothea, that she had behaved with great discretion in her story, both with regard to the matter and brevity of it, as well as the resemblance it bore to those legends that are found in books of chivalry. She observed, that she had employed a good part of her leisure time in reading such romances ; but, being ignorant of the situation of different provinces and sea-ports, she had spoke at random, when she mentioned her landing at Ossuna.—' I thought so,' resumed the priest, ' and made all haste to adjust matters by what I said ; but, is it not very strange to see with what facility this poor unfortunate gentleman swallows all those lies and fictions, merely because they are delivered in the stile and manner of his nonsensical books?'—' So very strange and singular,' said Cardenio, ' that I question if there be any genius whatever, so fertile as to frame such a character by the mere force of invention.'—' And what is a very

remarkable circumstance,' replied the curate, 'waving those extravagancies which this worthy gentleman utters upon the subject of his disorder, he can discourse upon other topics with surprising ability, and appears to be a man of great knowledge and intellects; so that, if you do not touch upon chivalry, his hearers must look upon him as a person of excellent understanding.'

While they were engaged in this conversation, Don Quixote proceeded in his with Sancho; to whom he said, 'Come, friend Panza, let us forget what is past, with regard to animosity, and tell me, without any ingredient of rancour and resentment, where and how you found Dulcinea? What was she doing? What did she say? What answer did she make? How did she look when she read my letter? Who transcribed it for her perusal? These particulars, and every other circumstance of the affair, which you think worthy to be known, asked, and answered, I expect you will explain, without seeking to increase my pleasure with false additions, much less to diminish it by malicious omission.'— 'Signior,' said Sancho, 'if the truth must be told, nobody transcribed the letter; because I had no letter to be transcribed.'— 'That is very true,' replied the knight; 'for, two days after thy departure, I found the pocket-book in which it was written; a circumstance that gave me infinite pain, as I could not conceive what thou wouldst do when the mistake should appear; indeed I always imagined thou wouldst have returned hither immediately upon the discovery.'— 'That would certainly have been the case,' said the squire, 'if, when your worship read it to me, I had not retained it in my memory, so perfect as to be able to dictate it to a parish clerk, who, as I repeated, transcribed it so exactly, that he said, in all the days of his life, though he had read many letters of excommunication, he had never seen such a clever letter as your's.'— 'And dost thou still retain it?' said Don Quixote.— 'No, Sir,' replied Sancho, 'For after I had put it into her hand, I thought there was no farther occasion to retain it,
and

and therefore let it slip out of my remembrance ; or, if any part remains, it is that of the subterrene, I mean sovereign lady, and the conclusion Your's till death, the Knight of the Rueful Countenance ; with about three hundred souls, and lives, and pigsnies, which I set down in the middle.'

CHAPTER IV.

The savoury Conversation that passed between Don Quixote and his Squire Sancho Panza, with many other Incidents.

'ALL this is pretty well ; proceed !' said Don Quixote : ' how was that queen of beauty employed, when you arrived ? I dare say, you found her stringing pearls, or embroidering some device for this her captive knight, with threads of gold.'—' No, truly,' answered the squire ; ' I found her winnowing two bushels of wheat in the yard.'—' Then you may depend upon it,' resumed the knight, ' the grains of that wheat were converted into pearls by the touch of her hand ; and didst thou observe, my friend, whether it was of the finer or common sort ?'—' Why, neither,' said Sancho ; ' it seemed to be, as it were, red wheat.'—' But since it was winnowed by her fair hands,' answered Don Quixote, ' I dare affirm, it will make the whitest bread in Spain. Go on with thy information. When the letter was delivered, did she not kiss it, and place it on the crown of her head, in token of respect ? Did she not perform some ceremony worthy of such a letter ? Pray how did she receive it ?'—' When I presented the letter,' answered Sancho, ' she was in a main hurry, winnowing a large heap of wheat that was in her sieve ; and said to me, " Friend, lay down the letter on that sack ; for I cannot pretend to read it, until I have made an end of my work."—' Discreet lady, cried the knight ; ' her intention certainly was to read it at her leisure, that she might recreate herself with the contents. Proceed, Sancho ; and while

while she was thus employed, what conversation passed between you? what questions did she ask concerning me? and what answers didst thou make? Recount the whole, without leaving one syllable untold.

‘She asked me no questions,’ replied the squire; ‘but I told her, how I had left your worship doing penance for love of her, skipping among those rocks, naked from the waist upwards, like a mere savage, sleeping on the bare ground; neglecting to eat your food like a Christian, or to comb your beard like a decent man; but whining, and weeping, and cursing your fortune!’—‘If you said I cursed my fortune, you misrepresented me,’ said Don Quixote; ‘for I bless my fate, and will bless it all the days of my life, for having made me worthy to aspire to the love of such an high lady as Dulcinea del Toboso.’—‘High indeed!’ answered Sancho, ‘for, in faith, she is a good hand taller than I am.’—‘How hast thou been measured with her, Sancho?’ said the knight. ‘I’ll tell you how,’ answered the squire; ‘while I was helping to lay a load of corn upon an ass, we came so close together, that I could easily perceive she over-topped me by a full hand.’—‘That may be true,’ said Don Quixote; ‘though her tallness is accompanied and adorned by a myriad of mental graces. But this you will not deny, Sancho, that while you was so near her, your nostrils were regaled by a Sabæan odour, an aromattick fragrance, a certain delicious sensation, for which there is no name. I mean, a scent, a perfume, such as fills the shop of some curious glover.’—‘All that I can say,’ answered Sancho, ‘is, that I was sensible of a sort of rammish smell, which I believe was owing to her being in a muck of sweat with hard work.’—‘That is impossible,’ cried the knight; ‘thy sense must have been depraved, or that smell must have proceeded from thy own body; for I am perfectly well acquainted with the odour of that rose among briars, that lily of the valley, that liquid amber.’ ‘It may be so,’ said Sancho: ‘I have often known such smells come from my Lady Dulcinea: but that is not to be wondered

dered at ; because, as the saying is, every fiend may stink of brimstone.' ' Well, then,' added Don Quixote, ' she hath now winnowed the wheat and sent it to the mill ; how did she behave after she had read my letter ?' ' The letter,' answered Sancho, ' was not read at all ; for, as she could neither read nor write, she chose to rend and tear it to pieces, rather than give it to any body who might publish her secrets in the village, saying, she was very well satisfied with the information I gave her by word of mouth, concerning your worship's love for her, and the extraordinary penance I left you doing on her account. Finally, she bade me tell you, that she kissed your worship's hands, being much more desirous of seeing than writing to you ; and therefore she entreated and commanded your worship, by these presents, to quit this desert, and leave off playing the fool, and forthwith set out on your journey to Toboso, provided that something else of greater importance should not happen, for she longed very much for a sight of your worship, and laughed heartily when I told her, that you had taken the name of the Knight with the Rueful Countenance. When I asked if the Biscayan had been lately with her, she answered, " Yes ;" and that he was very much of a gentleman ; but, when I enquired about the galley-slaves, she said she had as yet seen none of them.'

' Hitherto all goes well,' said the knight : ' but pray tell me what jewel she gave you at parting, for the news you had brought of me her lover ; for, it is an ancient practice and custom among knights-errant and their mistresses, to bestow upon their squires, damsels, or dwarfs, who bring them news of each other, some rich jewel, as a reward and acknowledgment for the message.' ' It may be so,' said Sancho ; and I think it an excellent custom, but that must have been in time past ; for in this age it is customary to give nothing but a piece of bread and cheese, which was all the present I received from my Lady Dulcinea, who reached it over the yard wall, when I took my leave ; by this token, that the cheese was made of ewe's milk.' ' She is liberal to excess,'

excess,' said the knight; 'and if she omitted giving thee a jewel, it must certainly have been owing to her not having any by her; but all in good time; I shall see her soon and then every thing will be set to rights. Yet there is one thing, Sancho, which overwhelms me with astonishment. You seem to have travelled through the air; for you have spent little more than three days in your journey; though Toboso is more than thirty leagues distant from hence. From this extraordinary expedition, I conjecture, that the sage, who is my friend, and interests himself in my affairs, and such there certainly is, and must be, else I should be no true knight-errant; I say, this inchanter must have assisted thee in thy journey, though thou didst not perceive it; for some there are of that class, who will take up a knight-errant while he is asleep in his bed, and, without his knowing any thing of the matter, he shall awake next morning in some place more than a thousand leagues from the house where he took up his lodging the night before; and without such sudden transportations, it would be impossible for knights to succour each other in distress, as they frequently do. A knight-errant, for example, happens to be fighting in the desarts of Armenia, with some fierce dragon, dreadful goblin, or rival knight; and being worsted, and just at the point of being slain, behold, when he least expects it, there suddenly appears in a cloud or fiery chariot, another knight, a friend of his, who but a minute before resided in England, and who assists and delivers him from death; and that same night, he finds himself supping at his ease at his own house, which is often two or three thousand leagues from the field of battle; and all this is effected by the industry and art of sage inchanters, who take those valiant knights under their protection.

'Wherefore, friend Sancho, I can easily believe that thou hast in so little time travelled from hence to Toboso and back again; because as I have already observed, some friendly sage must have carried thee thro' the air, though thou didst not perceive it.'

'Not unlikely,' replied the squire; 'for in good faith,

faith, Rozinante went like a gipsy's ass, with quicksilver in his ears.' 'With quicksilver,' cried the knight; 'ay, and a legion of dæmons to boot, who are beings that travel themselves, and make other people travel as fast as they please, without tiring.

'But, waving this subject, how dost thou think I ought to regulate my conduct, now that my mistress commands me to appear in her presence? for, although I find myself obliged to comply with her orders, I am utterly incapacitated by the boon I have granted to this princess: and I am bound by the laws of chivalry to fulfil my promise, before I indulge my inclination. On the one hand, I am persecuted and harrassed by the desire of seeing Dulcinea; on the other, I am incited and invited by my honour and the glory I shall acquire in this enterprise. I am therefore determined to travel with all expedition, until I arrive at the place where the giant resides; and, when I shall have restored the princess to the peaceful possession of her kingdom, after having shortened the usurper by the head, I will return to the rays of that beauty which enlightens my thoughts, and excuse myself in such a manner as to obtain her forgiveness, as she will plainly perceive that my delay tended to the increase of her glory and fame; seeing all my reputation in arms, past, present, or to come, proceeds from her favour and inspiration.' 'Lord!' cried Sancho, 'how your worship is concerned about a parcel of pot-shepherds. Pray tell me, Sir, do you intend to make this journey for nothing, and to let such a rich and noble marriage as this slip through your fingers; while the dowry is no less than a kingdom, which I have actually heard is more than twenty thousand leagues round, plentifully stored with every thing that is needful for the sustenance of mortal man, and larger than Portugal and Castile put together? Hold your tongue, a God's name, and take shame to yourself, for what you have said: pardon my freedom, take my advice, and marry in the first place where we can find a curate, or make use of our friend the licentiate, who will buckle you handsomely. Take notice, therefore,

fore, that I am of an age to give good counsel, and this that I offer will fit you to a hair; for a bird in hand is worth two in the bush; and, as the saying is, He that hath good in his view, and yet will not evil eschew, his folly deserveth to rue.'

'Sancho,' answered Don Quixote, 'if thou adviest me to marry, with a view of seeing me king, after I shall have killed the giant, that I may have an opportunity of rewarding thee with what I have promised, thou must know that I can easily gratify thy wishes, without wedding the princess; for, before I engage in the combat, I will covenant, that, provided I come off conqueror, and decline the marriage, I shall have it in my power to dispose of one part of the kingdom as I shall think proper; and to whom should I give it but to thee?' That is very plain,' replied the squire; 'but I beseech your worship to make choice of the sea-coast, because if I should happen to dislike the country, I may ship off my black slaves, and sell them, as I have already hinted. Wherefore, without troubling yourself at present about my Lady Dulcinea, I would have you go and slay the giant, and conclude that affair from which, before God! we shall certainly reap much honor and advantage.' 'I tell thee, Sancho,' said Don Quixote, 'thou art in the right, and I will follow thy advice, so far as it regards my attendance on the princess, before I visit Dulcinea. But say not a word to any body, even those of our company not excepted, of this conversation; for, as she is so reserved and careful of concealing her sentiments, it would be inexcusable in me, if I, or any other, through my means, should disclose them.' 'Since this is the case,' said the squire, 'why does your worship command all those that are vanquished by your arm to go and present themselves before my lady Dulcinea? you may as well give it under your hand, that you are her true and trusty lover; for, if you compel them to fall upon their knees before her, and say they are sent by your worship to pay homage to her, how is it possible that the sentiments of either you or her can be concealed?'

'What

‘What an ignorant and simple fellow thou art!’ resumed the knight; ‘canst thou not see that all this redounds to her praise and exaltation? Thou must know, that in our stile of chivalry, it is deemed a great honor for a lady to be admired by a great many knights, whose wishes extend no farther than to the desire of serving her for her own sake, without expecting any other reward for their great and manifold services, than the glory of being admitted into the number of her knights.’ ‘In like manner,’ said Sancho, ‘I have heard a priest in the pulpit observe, that we must love our Saviour for his own sake, without being moved thereto, by any fear of punishment or hopes of applause, though, for my own part, I am inclined to love and serve him on account of his power.’ ‘Now the devil take the clown!’ cried Don Quixote; ‘he sometimes makes such shrewd observations one would think he had actually studied;’ ‘And yet, upon my conscience,’ answered the squire, ‘I know not so much as my letters.’ At that instant Master Nicholas calling aloud to them to stop a little, that the rest might have time to drink at a spring which they found in the way; Don Quixote turned back, to the no small satisfaction of Sancho, who was already tired with telling lies, and afraid of being detected by his master; for, although he knew that Dulcinea was the daughter of a peasant at Toboso, he had never seen her in his life. By this time Cardenio had put on the clothes which Dorothea wore when they found her; and, though they were none of the most elegant, he made a much better figure than with his tattered drefs, which he now threw away. The whole company sat down by the spring, where, while they appeased the keen hunger that possessed them all, with what the curate had brought from the inn, a lad chanced to pass that way, who, looking earnestly at the whole company, at length run up to Don Quixote, and embracing his knees, began to blubber most heartily, saying, ‘Ah, Signior, don’t you know me; Look at me again; I am that same individual young man called Andrew, whom your worship delivered

from the tree to which I was tied.' The knight recollected his features, and taking him by the hand, addressed himself to the company in these words.

'That you may see of what importance knight-errantry is, to redress the wrongs and grievances which are daily committed by the insolent and wicked wretches who live upon this earth; know, that as I passed by a wood some time ago, I heard the screams and woeful cries of some afflicted creature in the utmost distress: and, in consequence of my oath and obligation, riding towards the place from which the lamentation seemed to come, I found this very young man tied to an oak tree; and I am glad from my soul that he is here in person, to bear witness to the truth. I say, he was bound to an oak, naked from the waist upwards; and a peasant, who I afterwards understood was his master, stood scourging him with the reins of a bridle. When I enquired into the cause of this barbarous treatment, the rustic answered, that he only whipped his own servant for being guilty of some neglect that favoured more of knavishness than simplicity. The boy protested he had done nothing but asked his wages: to this affirmation the master replied, by some asseverations which I have forgot; but though I heard his excuses, I would not admit of them. In short, I ordered the peasant to untie the youth, and made him swear that he would carry him home, and pay him his wages in ready cash, nay, and pay him in rials that should be perfumed. Is not this literally true, son Andrew? Didst thou not observe with what authority I commanded, and with what humility he promised to comply with every thing that I imposed, suggested, and desired? Answer without perturbation or doubt, and tell this honourable company what passed, that they may see and be convinced of what use it is, as I said to have knights-errant continually upon duty.'

All that your worship hath told is very true,' answered the young man; 'but the end of the business was quite the reverse of what you imagined.' How! the reverse! cried the knight; 'has not the peasant

sant paid thee thy wages?' 'Far from paying me my wages,' said Andrew, 'your worship was no sooner out of the wood, and we by ourselves again, than he bound me a second time to the same oak, and lashed me so severely, that I remained like St. Bartholomew, flayed alive, and at every stripe he jeered and scoffed, and made game of your worship in such a manner, that if it had not been for the excessive pain I felt, I could not have refrained from laughing at what he said. In short, he treated me so cruelly, that till this very day, I have been in the hospital, for the cure of the wounds I received from that mischievous farmer; and truly your worship was the cause of all that I suffered; for if you had followed your own road, without going where nobody called you, or meddling with other people's affairs, my master would have been satisfied with giving me a cool dozen or two, and then loosed and paid me my due. But when your worship abused him so unreasonably, and called him so many bad names, his choler was inflamed; and, as he could not be revenged upon you, as soon as you was gone, he discharged the storm of his wrath upon me, in such a manner that I shall never be my own man again.'

The misfortune, said the knight, 'was in my leaving him before I had seen thee paid; for I ought to have known by long experience, that no peasant will keep his word, if he thinks it his interest to break it. But thou mayest remember, Andrew, that I swore if he did not perform his promise, I would return and search for him, until he should be found, even if he should hide himself in the whale's belly.' 'Very true,' replied Andrew; 'but that threat signified nothing.' 'Thou shalt presently see what it signifies!' resumed Don Quixote; who, getting up hastily, ordered Sancho to bridle Rozinante, who was following their example in refreshing himself with grass.

When Dorothea asked what he intended to do, he replied, he was going in quest of the peasant, to chastise him for his villainous behaviour, and make him pay Andrew to the last farthing, in despite and defiance

defiance of all the rustics upon earth. To this declaration she answered, by desiring him to consider, that, according to the promised boon, he could not engage in any enterprize until her affair should be finished; and since this stipulation was known to himself better than to any other person, she intreated him to repress his resentment till his return from her kingdom. 'That is very true,' resumed the knight; 'and Andrew must wait with patience for my return, as your majesty observes; but I repeat my oath and my promise, never to desist until I shall have seen his wages paid, and his injuries revenged.' 'I don't trust to those oaths,' said Andrew, 'and would rather, at present, have wherewithal to bear my expences to Seville, than all the revenge in the world: be so good, if you have any victuals, to give me something to eat upon my journey, and the Lord be with your worship and all knights-errant, who, I wish, may always err as much in their own affairs as they have done in mine.' Sancho, taking a luncheon of bread and cheese from the store, gave it to the young man, saying, 'Here, brother Andrew, take this; and now we have all shared in your misfortune.' When Andrew asked what share of it had fallen to him, he replied, 'That share of bread and cheese, which I have given you; and God knows whether I shall not feel the loss of it; for you must know, friend, that we squires of knights-errant are subject to many a hungry belly, with other misfortunes which are more easily felt than described.'

Andrew accepted of the bread and cheese, and seeing that nobody offered him any thing else, made his bows, and, as the saying is, took his foot in his hand*. True it is, before he departed, he addressed himself to Don Quixote, saying, 'For the love of God! Sir knight-errant, if ever you meet me again, spare yourself the trouble of coming to my assistance, even though you should see me cut into minced meat, but leave me to my misfortune, which

* Literally, "Took the road in his hands."

which cannot be so great but that it may be increased by the succour of your worship, whom God confound, together with all the knights-errant that ever were born.' Don Quixote started up, in order to chastise him, but he ran away with such nimbleness, that nobody attempted to pursue him; and the knight was so ashamed of his exploit, that the company were at great pains to contain their laughter, to prevent his being quite out of countenance.

CHAPTER V.

Which treats of what happened to Don Quixote and his Company at the Inn.

THEIR sumptuous meal being ended, they saddled their beasts, and without meeting any thing worthy of mention, arrived next day at the very inn which was so much the dread and terror of Sancho; but, unwilling as he was to enter, he could not avoid going into it. The innkeeper, his wife, daughter, and Maritornes, seeing Don Quixote and Sancho at the gate, went out to receive them, with great demonstrations of joy; and the knight returned their compliments with grave deportment and solemn approbation, desiring them to prepare a better bed for him than that which he had occupied before. To this demand the landlady answered, that, provided he would pay better than he did before, he should lie like a prince: he promised to see her satisfied, and they immediately made up a tolerable bed, in the same garret where he had formerly lodged, in which he laid himself down very much disordered, both in body and mind. He was no sooner locked up in his chamber, than the landlady attacked the barber, and seizing him by the beard, cried, 'By my faith! you shall no longer use my tail for a beard. Give me my tail, I say; for it is a shame to see how my husband's thing is bandied about for want of it; I mean the comb that he used to stick in my tail.'

But the barber would not part with it, for all her tugging, until the priest desired him to restore it; because there was no farther occasion for the disguise, as he might now appear in his own shape, and tell the knight, that after he had been robbed by the galley-slaves, he had fled to that inn; and if he should enquire for the princess's gentleman usher, they would tell him she had dispatched him away before her, to advertise her friends and subjects, that she was upon the road, accompanied by the deliverer of them all. Thus satisfied, the barber willingly restored the landlady's tail, and every thing else they had borrowed with a view of disengaging Don Quixote from the mountain: and all the people of the inn were astonished at the beauty of Dorothea, as also at the genteel mien of the swain Cardenio. The curate ordered them to get ready something to eat; and the inn-keeper, in hope of being well paid, dressed, with all dispatch, a pretty reasonable dinner; but they did not think proper to waken Don Quixote, who, they believed, stood at that time more in need of sleep than of food.

The discourse at table, in presence of the inn-keeper, his wife, daughter, Maritornes, and all the other lodgers, happening to turn upon the uncommon madness of the knight, and the condition in which they found him; the hostess recounted to them, what had happened in her house between him and the carrier; then looking round the room, and seeing Sancho was not present, she told the whole story of the blanketting, to the no small entertainment of the company. The curate observing that Don Quixote's understanding was disordered by the books of chivalry he had read, the innkeeper replied, 'I cannot conceive how that is possible; for really, in my opinion, they are the best reading in the world: I have now in my custody two or three of them, together with some other papers, which, I verily believe, have preserved not only my life, but also that of many others; for, in harvest-time, a great number of reapers come hither, to pass the heat of the day; and there being always one among them who

can read, he takes up a book, and we, to the number of thirty or more, forming a ring about him, listen with such pleasure, as were enough to make an old man grow young again ; at least, I can say for myself ; when I hear him read of those furious and terrible strokes that have been given by certain knights, I am seized with the desire of being at it myself, and could listen to such stories whole nights and days without ceasing.' ' I wish you would, with all my heart,' replied the wife : ' for, I am sure, I never enjoy a quiet minute in the house, except when they are reading, and then you are so bamboozled with what you hear, you forget to scold for that time.' ' That is the very truth of the matter,' said Maritornes ; ' in good faith, I myself am hugely diverted, when I hear of those things ; they are so clever, especially when they tell us how yon t'other lady lay among orange-trees, in the embraces of her knight, while a duenna, half dead with envy and surprize, kept sentry over them ; odd ! all these things make my chops water.

' And what is your opinion of the matter, my young mistress ?' said the priest to the innkeeper's daughter. ' Truly, Signior, I don't well know,' she replied ; ' but listen among the rest ; and really, though I do not understand it, I am pleased with what I hear ; yet I take no delight in those strokes that my father loves ; but, in the lamentations made by the knights, when they are absent from their mistresses, which, in good sooth, often make me weep with compassion.' ' Then you would soon give them relief, if they mourned for you, my pretty maid ?' said Dorothea. ' I don't know what I should do, answered the girl ; ' but, this I know, that some of these ladies are so cruel, their knights call them lions, tygers, and a thousand other reproachful names. Jesus ! I can't conceive what sort of folks those must be, who are so hard-hearted and unconscionable as to let a man of honour die, or lose his senses, rather than take the least notice of him ; why should they be so coy ? If their suitors court them in an honest way, let them marry, and that

that all is the men desire.' 'Hold your peace, child,' said the landlady; 'methinks, you are too well acquainted with these things; young maidens, like you, should neither know nor speak so much.' The daughter said, as the gentleman asked her the question, she should do no less than answer him: and the curate demanded a sight of the books.— 'With all my heart,' replied the innkeeper, who, going to his own chamber, brought out an old portmanteau secured with a chain, which being opened, the priest found in it three large volumes, and some manuscripts written in a very fair character.

The first book they opened appeared to be Don Cirongilio of Thrace; the second, Felixmarte of Hyrcania; and the third, was the history of that great Captain Goncalo Hernandez de Cordova, with the life of Diego Garcia de Paredes. The curate having read the titles of the two first, turned to the barber, saying, 'We now want our friend's housekeeper and cousin.' 'Not at all,' answered Mr. Nicholas; 'I myself can convey them to the yard, or rather to the chimney, where there is actually a special good fire.' 'What! you intend to burn these books, then,' said the innkeeper. 'Only these two,' answered the curate, pointing to Don Cirongilio and Felixmarte. 'I suppose then,' resumed the landlord, 'my books are heretic and phlegmatic?' 'You mean schismatic, honest friend, and not phlegmatic,' said the barber. 'Even so,' replied the landlord; 'but, if any of them be burnt, let it be the history of that great captain, together with Diego Garcia; for, I would rather suffer you to commit my son to the flames, than to burn e'er a one of the rest.' 'Heark ye, brother,' said the curate, 'these two books are stuffed with lies, vanity, and extravagance; but that of the great captain is a true history, containing the exploits of Goncalo Hernandez de Cordova, who, by his numerous and valiant achievements, acquired, all the world over, the epithet of the Great Captain, a renowned and splendid appellation, merited by him
alone

alone ; and that Diego Garcia de Paredes was a noble cavalier, born in the city of Truxillo in Estremadura, a most valiant soldier, and endowed with such bodily strength, that with a single finger he could stop a mill wheel in the heat of its motion ; and being once posted at the end of a bridge, with a two-handed sword, he alone prevented a vast army from passing over it ; he performed a great many actions of the same kind, which he himself hath recounted with all the modesty of a gentleman who writes his own memoirs ; whereas, had they been committed to writing by any other free and dispassionate author, they would have eclipsed all the Hector's, Achilles's, and Orlando's, that ever lived.

' You may tell such stuff to my grannam,' said the innkeeper. ' Lord ! how you are surprized at the stopping of a mill-wheel ; before God, I advise your worship to read, as I have done*, the history of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, who, with a single back stroke, cut five giants through the middle, as easily as if they had been made of beans, like the figures with which the boys divert themselves. Another time, he engaged a most infinite and powerful army, consisting of a million and six hundred thousand soldiers, all armed cap-a-pee, whom he totally routed, as if they had been flocks of sheep. Then what shall we say of the most excellent Don Ciriogilio of Thrace, who was so valiant and courageous, as may be seen in the book of his history, that while he was sailing on the river a fiery serpent rose above the water, which he no sooner saw, than leaping on its back, he fastened himself astride upon its scaly shoulders, and seized it by the throat, with both hands, so forcibly, that the serpent feeling itself well-nigh strangled, could find no other remedy but to dive into the profound, with the knight, who would not quit his hold ; and when he descended to the bottom, he found himself in a palace situated in the midst of a garden that
was

* It will appear in the sequel, that the landlord could not read at all ; nevertheless, he might boast of what he could not do.

was wonderfully pleasant; and then the serpent turned itself into an ancient man, who told him such things as you would rejoice to hear. Say no more, Signior, if you was to hear it, you would run stark mad for joy; so that a fig for your great captain, and that same Diego Garcia you talk of!

Dorothea hearing this harangue, whispered to Cardenio, 'Our host wants not much to make the second edition of *Don Quixote*.' 'I think so too,' answered Cardenio; 'for, by his discourse, he seems to take it for granted, that every thing which is recounted in these books, is neither more nor less than the truth; and all the capuchins in Spain will not be able to alter his belief.' 'Consider, brother,' resumed the curate, 'that there never was upon earth such a person as Felixmarte of Hyrcania, nor Don Cirongilio of Thrace, nor any other of such knights as are celebrated in books of chivalry. The whole is a fiction composed by idle persons of genius, for the very purpose you mentioned, namely, pastime, which was the aim of your reapers; for, I swear to you, no such knights ever existed, nor were any such exploits and extravagancies ever performed in this world.' 'You must throw that bone to some other dog!' replied the landlord; 'as if I did not know that two and three make five; or where my own shoe pinches. Your worship must not think to feed me with pap, for egad I am no such suckling! A good joke, faith! You would make me believe that all the contents of these books are madness and lies, although they are printed by licence from the king's council; as if they were persons who would wink at the printing of such lies, battles, and enchantments, as turn people's brains'— 'Friend,' replied the curate, 'I have already told you, that they are designed for the amusement of our idle hours; and, as in every well-governed commonwealth, the games of chess, billiards, and tennis, are licensed for the entertainment of those who neither can nor ought to work; in like manner, those books are allowed to be printed, on the supposition, that nobody is so ignorant as to believe a syllable

syllable of what they contain; and if I was now permitted, or the company required it, I could give some hints towards the improvement of books of chivalry, which perhaps might be both serviceable and entertaining; but I hope the time will come, when I may have an opportunity of imparting my suggestions to those who can convert them to general use: meanwhile, Mr. Publican, you may depend upon the truth of what I have said: take your books away, and settle the affair of their truth or falshood, just as your own comprehension will permit; much good may they do you, and God grant that you may never halt on the same foot on which your lodger Don Quixote is lame! 'I hope,' answered the inn-keeper, 'I shall never be mad enough to turn knight-errant, as I can easily perceive that the customs now a-days are quite different from those in times past, when, as it is reported, those famous heroes travelled about the world.'

Sancho, who had come into the room, about the middle of this conversation, was very much confounded and perplexed, when he heard them observe, that there was no such thing as knight-errantry in the present age, and that all the books of chivalry were filled with extravagance and fiction; he therefore determined within himself, to wait the issue of his master's last undertaking; and if it should not succeed as happily as he expected, to leave him, and return, with his wife and children, to his former labour.

When the inn-keeper took up the portmanteau with the books, in order to carry them away, 'Stay,' said the curate, 'until I examine these papers which are written in such a fair character.' The landlord accordingly pulled out a manuscript, consisting of eight sheets of paper, intitled, in large letters, 'The Novel of the Impertinent Curiosity*.' The priest having read three or four lines to himself, said

* The original, which is *curioso impertinente*, signifies one who is impertinently curious, not a curious impertinent.

said, ' Really the title of this novel pleases me so much, that I have a strong inclination to peruse the whole.' To this observation, the innkeeper replied, ' Then your reverence may read it aloud ; for, you must know, the reading of it hath given great satisfaction to several lodgers at this inn, who have earnestly begged the copy ; but the request I would not comply with, because I think of restoring it to the right owner, as I expect that the person who left the portmanteau with the books and papers, in a mistake, will return, on purpose to fetch them ; or you know, he may chance to travel this way on other business ; and though I should miss them heavily, in faith they shall be restored ; for, though an innkeeper, I am still a Christian.' ' Friend,' said the curate, ' you are very much in the right ; but, for all that, if I like the novel, you shall give me leave to transcribe it.' ' With all my heart,' replied the landlord. While this discourse passed between them, Cardenio having taken up the manuscript, and began to read, was of the curate's opinion, and intreated him to read it aloud, that the whole company might hear it. ' I will,' answered the priest, ' if you think we had not better spend the time in sleeping than in reading.' ' For my own part,' said Dorothea, ' it will be a sufficient refreshment for me to listen to some entertaining story ; for my mind is not composed enough to let me sleep, even if I stood in need of repose.' ' If that be the case,' resumed the curate, ' I will read it out of curiosity, at a venture, and perhaps it will yield us some entertainment into the bargain.' Master Nicholas earnestly joined in the request, and Sancho himself expressed a desire of hearing it ; upon which the licentiate finding he should please the whole company as well as himself, ' Well, then,' said he, ' listen with attention, for the novel begins in this manner.'

CHAPTER VI.

The Novel of the Impertinent Curiosity.

IN Florence, a rich and celebrated city of Italy, situated in the province called Tuscany, lived Anselmo and Lothario, two wealthy and noble cavaliers, so strictly united in the bonds of amity, that every body who knew them, called them, by way of excellence and epithet, the Two Friends; and, indeed, being both batchelors, and their age and education so much alike, it was not to be wondered at if a reciprocal affection sprung up between them; true it is, Anselmo was rather more addicted to amorous pastime than Lothario, whose chief delight was in hunting; yet upon occasion, Anselmo could quit his own amusements to pursue those of his friend; and Lothario could postpone his favourite diversion, in order to practise that of Anselmo: in this manner their inclinations proceeded so mutually, that no clock ever went with more regularity. Anselmo happened to fall desperately in love with a young lady of rank and beauty in the same city, descended from such a noble family, and so amiable in herself, that he determined, with the approbation of his friend, without which he did nothing, to demand her of her parents in marriage; and accordingly put his resolution in practice. Lothario was intrusted with the message, and concluded the affair so much to the satisfaction of his friend, that in a very little time Anselmo saw himself in possession of his heart's desire; and Camilla thought herself so happy in having obtained such a husband, that she was incessant in her acknowledgements to Heaven and Lothario, by whose mediation her happiness was effected.

During the first two days after marriage, which are commonly spent in feasting and mirth, Lothario, as usual, frequented the house of his friend, with a view of honouring his nuptials, and endeavouring, as much as in him lay, to promote the joy and festivity attending all such occasions; but the wedding

being over, and the frequency of visits and congratulations abated, he began carefully and gradually to absent himself from Anselmo's house, thinking, as every prudent person would naturally conclude, that a man ought not to visit and frequent the house of a friend after he is married, in the same manner as he he had practised while he was single; for, though suspicion should never find harbour with true and virtuous friendship, yet the honour of a married man is so delicate, as to be thought subject to injury, not only from a friend, but even from a brother. Anselmo perceived Lothario's remissness, and complained of it loudly; saying, that if he had thought his marriage would have impaired their former correspondence, he never would have altered his condition; and begged, that as by the mutual friendship which inspired them while he was single, they had acquired such an agreeable title as that of the Two Friends, he would not suffer that endearing and celebrated name to be lost, by a scrupulous adherence to mere form and punctilio. He therefore entreated him, if he might be allowed to use the expression, to be master of his house, and to come in and go out as formerly, assuring him that the inclinations of Camilla, in that respect, were exactly conformable to his own; and that knowing the perfect friendship which subsisted between them, she was extremely mortified at his late shyness.

To these and many other arguments used by Anselmo, to persuade his friend to frequent his house as usual, Lothario answered with such prudence, force, and discernment, that the other was convinced of his discreet conduct; and it was agreed betwixt them, that Lothario should dine with him twice a week, besides holidays; but, notwithstanding this agreement, he resolved to comply with it no farther than he should see convenient for the honour of Anselmo, which was dearer to him than his own. He said, and his observation was just, that a man on whom Heaven hath bestowed a beautiful wife, should be as cautious of the men he brings home to his house, as careful in observing the

the female friends with whom his spouse converses abroad ; for that which cannot be performed nor concerted in the street or the church, or at public shows and diversions, with which a husband must sometimes indulge his wife, may be easily transacted in the house of a female friend or relation, in whom his chief confidence is reposed. Wherefore, Lothario observed, that every married man had occasion for some friend to apprize him of any omission in her conduct ; for it often happens that he is too much in love with his wife, to observe, or too much afraid of offending her, to prescribe the limits of her behaviour in those things, the following or eschewing of which may tend to his honour or reproach, whereas that inconvenience might be easily amended by the advice of a friend. But where shall we find such a zealous, discreet, trusty friend, as is here required ? I really know not, except in Lothario himself, who, consulting the honour of Anselmo, with the utmost care and circumspection, was at great pains to contract, abridge, and diminish, the number of the days on which he had agreed to frequent his house ; that the idle vulgar, and prying eyes of malice, might not indulge their love of slander, when they perceived a genteel young man of such birth, fortune, and accomplishments as he knew himself possessed of, go into the house of such a celebrated beauty as Camilla ; for, although his virtue and honour might be a sufficient check to the most malevolent tongue, he would not expose his own character, or that of his friend, to the smallest censure ; and therefore employed the greatest part of those days on which he agreed to visit Anselmo, in such things as he pretended were indispensable ; so that when they were present, a great deal of time was consumed by the complaints of the one, and excuses of the other. One day, however, as they were walking through a meadow, near the suburbs of the city, Anselmo addressed himself to Lothario in these terms.

“ You believe, my friend Lothario, that I can never be thankful enough to Heaven for the blessings
M 2 I enjoy.

I enjoy, not only in the most indulgent parents, and in the abundance of those things which are called the goods of nature and fortune, but also in a friend like you, and a wife like Camilla, two pledges which I esteem, if not as highly as I ought, at least as much as I can. Yet, though I possess all those benefits which usually constitute the happiness of mankind, I find myself one of the most disgusted and discontented men alive. I have been for these many days so harassed and fatigued with such an odd unaccountable desire, that I cannot help being amazed at my insatiation, for which I often blame and rebuke myself, endeavouring to suppress and conceal it from my own reflection; but I find it as impossible to keep the secret, as if I had industriously published it to the whole world, and since it must actually be disclosed to somebody, I would have it deposited in the most secret archives of your heart, in full confidence, that by the diligence which you as a trusty friend will exert in my behalf, when you know it, I shall soon see myself delivered from that anxiety to which it hath reduced me, and by your assiduity be raised to a pitch of joy equal to the degree of vexation which my own folly hath entailed upon me."

'Lothario was astonished at this discourse of Anselmo, as he could not comprehend the meaning of such a long preface and preamble, and endeavoured, by revolving every thing in his imagination, to find out what this desire could be, that preyed so much upon the spirits of his friend; but, finding himself always wide of the mark, he was willing to ease himself immediately of the excessive pain his suspense occasioned; and with this view told Anselmo, that he did a manifest injury to the warmth of his friendship, in going about the bush, seeking indirect methods to impart his most secret thoughts, since he was well assured that he might entirely depend upon him, either for advice to suppress, or assistance to support them. "I am well convinced of the truth of what you say," answered Anselmo, "and in that confidence will tell you, my friend, that the desire with which I am possessed, is to be certain, whether

or

or not my wife Camilla is as virtuous and perfect as I believe her to be; and this truth I shall never be fully persuaded of, until the perfection of her nature appear upon trial, as pure gold is proved by fire; for it is my opinion, that there is no woman virtuous, but in proportion to the sollicitation she hath withstood; and that she only is chaste, who hath not yielded to the promises, presents, tears, and continual importunities of persevering lovers. And pray where is the merit of a woman's being chaste, when nobody ever courted her to be otherwise? what wonder that she should be reserved and cautious, who has no opportunity of indulging loose inclinations and who knows her husband would immediately put her to death should he once catch her tripping? Wherefore I can never entertain the same degree of esteem for a woman who is chaste out of fear, or want of opportunity, as I would for her who hath triumphed over perseverance of sollicitation; so that for these, and many other reasons I could urge to sanction and enforce my opinion, I desire that my wife Camilla may undergo the test, and be refined in the fire of importunate addresses, by one possessed of sufficient accomplishments to inspire a woman with love; and if she comes off, as I believe she will, victorious in the trial, I shall think my own happiness unparalleled. I shall then be able to say that my wishes are fulfilled, and that she hath fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man saith, "*Who hath found her?*" And even if the contrary of what I expect should happen, the satisfaction of seeing my opinion confirmed, will help me to bear with patience that which would otherwise prove such a costly experiment. Supposing, then, that nothing you can say, in opposition to this desire of mine, can avail in diverting me from my purpose, I expect and entreat that you, my friend Lothario, will condescend to be the instrument with which I execute this work of my inclination. I will give you proper opportunities, and supply you with every thing I see necessary for solliciting a woman of virtue, honor, and disinterested reserve; and what among other things

induces me to intrust you with this enterprize, is the consideration, that should Camilla's scruples be overcome, you will not pursue your conquest to the last circumstance of rigour, but only suppose that done, which, for good reason, ought to remain undone : so that I shall be injured by her inclination alone, and my wrongs lie buried in the virtue of your silence, which I know, in whatever concerns my welfare, will be eternal as that of death. Wherefore, if you would have me enjoy what deserves to be called life, you will forthwith undertake this amorous contest, not with luke-warmness and languor, but with that eagerness and diligence which corresponds with my wish, and the confidence in which I am secured by your friendship."

'Such was the discourse of Anselmo; to which Lothario listened so attentively, that, except what he is already said to have uttered, he did not open his lips, until his friend had finished his proposal: but finding he had nothing more to alledge, after having for some time gazed upon him as an object hitherto unseen, that inspired him with astonishment and surprise, "I cannot be persuaded, Anselmo," said he, "but what you have said was spoke in jest; for, had I thought you in earnest, I should not have suffered you to proceed so far; but, by refusing to listen have prevented such a long harangue. Without doubt, you must either mistake my disposition, or I be utterly unacquainted with yours; and yet I know you to be Anselmo and you must be sensible that I am Lothario; the misfortune is, I no longer find you the same Anselmo you was wont to be, nor do I appear to you the same Lothario as before; your discourse favours not that of Anselmo who was my friend, nor is what you ask to be demanded of that Lothario who shared your confidence. Good men, as a certain poet observes, may try and avail themselves of their friends, *usque ad aras*; I mean, not presume upon their friendship, in things contrary to the decrees of Heaven. Now, if a heathen entertained such ideas of friendship, how much more should they be cherished by a Christian, who knows,

that

that no human affection ought to interfere with our love to God; and, when a person stretches his connections so far as to lay aside all respect for heaven, in order to manifest his regard for a friend, he ought not to be swayed by trifles or matters of small consequence, but by those things only on which the life and honour of a friend depend. Tell me, then, Anselmo, which of these is in danger, before I venture to gratify your wish, by complying with the detestable proposal you have made? Surely, neither; on the contrary, if I conceive you aright, you are desirous that I should indefatigably endeavour to deprive you, and myself also, of that very life and honor which it is my duty to preserve; for if I rob you of honor I rob you of life; since a man without honor, is worse than dead; and I being the instrument, as you desire I should be, that entails such a curse upon you, shall not I be dishonored, and of consequence dead to all enjoyment and fame? Listen with patience, my friend Anselmo, and make no answer until I shall have done with imparting the suggestions of my mind, concerning the strange proposal you have made; for there will be time enough for you to reply, and me to listen in my turn." "With all my heart," cried Anselmo; "you may speak as long long as you please."

'Accordingly, Lothario proceeded, saying, "In my opinion, Anselmo, your disposition is at present like that of the Moors, who will not suffer themselves to be convicted of the errors of their sect, by quotations from the Holy Scripture, nor with arguments founded on speculation, or the articles of faith; but must be confuted or convinced by examples that are palpable, easy, familiar, and subject to the certainty of mathematical demonstration; for instance, if from equal parts, we take equal parts, those that remain are equal. And if they do not understand this proposition verbally, as is frequently the case, it must be explained and set before their eyes by manual operation, which is also insufficient to persuade them of the truth of our holy religion. The self-same method must I practise with you, whose desire deviates

viates so far from every thing that bears the least shadow of reason, that I should look upon it as time mis-spent, to endeavour to convince you of your folly, which is the only name your intention seems to deserve. Nay, I am even tempted to leave you in your extravagancy, as a punishment for your, preposterous desire; but I am prevented from using such rigour by my friendship, which will not permit me to desert you in such manifest danger of perdition. But, to make this affair still more plain, tell me, Anselmo, did not you desire me to solicit one that was reserved, seduce one that was chaste, make presents to one that was disinterested, and assiduously court one that was wise? Yes, such was your demand. If you are apprised, then, of the reserve, virtue, disinterestedness, and prudence of your wife, pray what is your aim? If you believe that she will triumph over all my assaults, as undoubtedly she will, what fairer titles can you bestow upon her, than those she possesses already? or how will she be more perfect after that trial, than she is at present? You either do not believe she is so virtuous as you have represented her, or know not the nature of your demand. If you think she is not so chaste as you have described her, you should not hazard the trial; but rather, according to the dictates of your own prudence, treat her as a vicious woman: if you are satisfied of her virtue, it would be altogether impertinent to make trial of that truth, which, from the test, can acquire no additional esteem. From whence we may reasonably conclude, that for men to execute designs which are clearly productive of more hurt than benefit, is the province of madness and temerity; especially, when they are not excited or compelled to these designs by any sort of consideration; but, on the contrary, may at a greater distance perceive the manifest madness of their intention. Difficulties are undertaken, either for the sake of God, of this world, or of both. The first are incurred by holy men, who live the life of angels here on earth; the second, by those who traverse the boundless ocean, visiting such a diversity

diversity of climates and nations, with a view of acquiring what are called the goods of fortune; and such undertakings as equally regard God and man, fall to the share of those valiant soldiers, who no sooner behold, in the wall of an adverse city, a breach, though no bigger than that which is made by a single cannon ball, than laying aside all fear, and overlooking with unconcern the manifest danger that menaces them, winged with desire of signaling their valour in behalf of their king, country, and religion, throw themselves, with the utmost intrepidity, into the midst of a thousand deaths that oppose and await them. These are the enterprises which are generally undertaken, and though full of peril and inconvenience, attended with glory, honour, and advantage; but that which you have planned, and purpose to put in execution, neither tends to your acquiring the approbation of God, the goods of fortune, nor the applause of mankind; for, granting that the experiment should succeed to your wish, it will make you neither more happy, rich, or respected than you are; and should it turn out contrary to your expectation, you will find yourself the most miserable of all mortals. It will then give you little ease to reflect, that your misfortune is unknown; for, the bare knowing it yourself, will be sufficient to plunge you in affliction and despair. As a confirmation of this truth, you must give me leave to repeat the following stanza, written by the celebrated poet Lewis Tansillo, at the end of the first part of the Tears of St. Peter.

" When Peter saw the approach of rosy morn,

" His soul with sorrow and remorse was torn :

" For, though from ev'ry mortal eye conceal'd,

" The guilt to his own bosom stood reveal'd :

" The candid breast will, self-accusing, own

" Each conscious fault, though to the world unknown ;

" Nor will th' offender 'scape internal shame,

" Tho' unimpeach'd by justice or by fame."

" Wherefore, secrecy will never assuage your grief; but, on the contrary, you will incessantly weep, not tears from your eyes, but drops of blood from

from your heart, like that simple doctor, whom our poet mentions*, who made trial of the vessel, which the prudent Rinaldo, with more discretion, refused to touch; and although this be a poetical fiction, it nevertheless contains a well couched moral, worthy of notice, study, and imitation; especially as what I am going to say, will, I hope, bring you to a due sense of the great error you want to commit.

" Tell me, Anselmo, if Heaven or good fortune had made you master and lawful possessor of an exquisite diamond, the brilliancy of which was admired by all the lapidaries who had seen it, and unanimously allowed to be the most perfect of its kind; an opinion, which, as you knew nothing to the contrary, was exactly conformable to your own; would it be wise or pardonable in you, to put that jewel betwixt an anvil and a hammer, and, by mere dint of blows and strength of arm, try if it was as hard and perfect as it had been pronounced? for, supposing that the diamond should resist the force of this foolish experiment, it would thereby acquire no addition of value or fame; and, if it should be broke to pieces, a thing that might easily happen, would not all be lost? Yes, for certain; and the owner be universally deemed a fool. Consider then, my friend, that Camillo is an exquisite diamond, not only in your estimation, but in that of every one who knows her; and it would be highly unreasonable to expose her to the least possibility of being broke; for, even should she remain entire, her reputation will receive no increase; but, should she fail in the trial, reflect upon what you must feel, and the reason you will

then

* Ludovico Ariosto, author of *Orlando Furioso*, to which poem Cervantes frequently alludes. Here, however, he seems to have forgot the passage he meant to cite; for the person who proffered the cup to Rinaldo, was no doctor. In Canto 43, of the *Orlando Furioso*, mention is made, indeed of one Anselmo, who was a Doctor of Law, but not at all concerned in the enchanted cup; yet it must be owned, that Dr. Anselmo had recourse to an astrologer, in order to know whether his wife preserved her chastity in his absence.

then have to complain of yourself, for having been the fatal cause of her perdition, and your own despair. Consider, that no jewel upon earth is comparable to a woman of virtue and honour; and, that the honour of the sex consists in the fair characters they maintain. Since, therefore, the reputation of your wife is already as high as it possibly can be, why would you bring this truth into question? Remember, my friend, that woman is an imperfect creature; and, that far from laying blocks in her way, over which she might stumble and fall, we ought to remove them with care, and clear her paths from all obstructions, that she may, without trouble, proceed smoothly, in attaining to that perfection which she may still want, namely, immaculate virtue. We are informed by naturalists, that the ermin is a little animal, covered with a furr of an excessive whiteness, and that the hunters use this artifice to catch it: being well acquainted with the places through which it chuses to pass in its flight, they daub them all over with mud, and as soon as they get sight of the creature, drive it directly thither. The ermin finding himself thus barricadoed, stands still, and is taken: chusing captivity, rather than, by passing through the filth, to stain and sully the whiteness of its furr, which it prizes above liberty, and even life itself. A chaste and virtuous wife is like the ermin, her character being more pure and white than drifted snow; but he who would guard and preserve it must use a method quite different from that which is practised upon the little animal, and beware of clogging her way with the mud of entertainments, and the addresses of importunate lovers; lest, perhaps, (nay, without a perhaps) she should not possess such virtue and resolution as are sufficient of themselves to surmount those obstructions. It is therefore necessary to remove them, and place before her the purity of virtue, and the beauty of an unblemished reputation. A virtuous woman also resembles a bright transparent mirror, which is liable to be
stained

stained and obscured by the breath of those who approach too near it. A virtuous woman, like relics, ought to be adored at a distance. She ought to be preserved and esteemed as a beautiful garden, full of flowers and roses, the owner of which will suffer nobody to handle them or pass through it, permitting them only to enjoy its fragrance and beauty afar off, through the iron rails that surround it. In fine I will repeat a few verses that I just now recollect, from a modern comedy, because they seem to have been composed upon the very subject of our present discourse. A sage old man advising his friend, who is blessed with a handsome daughter, to lock her up, and watch over her with the utmost vigilance and care, among other reasons, cautions him with these—

I.

- “WOMAN is form'd of brittle ware;
 “Then wherefore rashly seek to know
 “What force, unbroken, she will bear,
 “And strike, perhaps, some fatal blow

II

- “Though easily to fragments tore,
 “’Twere equally absurd and vain,
 “To dash in pieces on the floor,
 “What never can be join’d again.

III.

- “This maxim, then by facts assur’d
 “Should henceforth be espous’d by all:
 “Where’er a Danaë lies immur’d,
 “The tempting show’r of gold will fall.”

“All that I have hitherto suggested, Anselmo, regards yourself; and now it is but reasonable that you should hear something that concerns me; and if I should be prolix in my observations, you must excuse me, because it is absolutely necessary to expatiate on the subject, in order to extricate you from the labyrinth in which you are involved, and from which you desire to be disengaged by my assistance. You consider me as a friend, and yet seek to deprive me of my honor; a desire opposite to all friendship or regard; nay, even endeavour to make me rob you of your own. That you want to destroy

destroy mine, is plain ; for Camilla, finding herself exposed to my solicitations, as you desire, will certainly look upon me as a man void of all principle and honour ; because I attempt to succeed in a design so contrary to the dignity of my own character, and the friendship subsisting between us. That you desire I should rob you of yours, is not to be doubted ; because, Camilla, seeing herself importuned by my addresses, will think I must have observed some levity in her conduct, which hath encouraged me to disclose my vicious inclinations, and think herself dishonoured accordingly ; so that you will be as much concerned in her dishonour, as if it was your own. Hence springs the common observation, that the husband of a lewd woman, though he neither knows, nor hath given the least occasion for the misconduct of his wife, and though his misfortune was neither owing to his want of prudence or care, is, notwithstanding, pointed at, and distinguished by a name of scandal and reproach ; being looked upon, by those who know the frailty of his wife, with an eye of disdain, instead of compassion, which he certainly deserves, as his disgrace proceeds not from any fault of his, but from the loose inclinations of his worthless spouse. I will now explain the reason, why the husband of a bad woman is justly dishonoured, though he neither knows, nor hath been in any shape accessory to her back-slidings ; and you must hear me with patience, because my remarks will, I hope, redound to your own advantage.

“ When God created our first parent in the terrestrial paradise, we are told, by the Holy Scripture, that he was thrown into a deep sleep, during which, the Almighty took a rib from his left side, and of this Eve being formed, Adam no sooner awoke and beheld her, than he cried, “ *This creature is flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bone.*” Nay, God himself pronounced, “ *For this shall a man leave father and mother, and they two shall be one flesh.*” Then was instituted the

divine sacrament of marriage, consisting of such ties as death alone can unbind, and endowed with such miraculous virtue and power, as to unite two different persons in one flesh; nay, what is still more wonderful, to combine two souls, so as to produce but one will; provided the union be happily effected. From hence it follows, that the flesh of the wife being the same with that of the husband, whatever stains or blemishes are imbibed by the first, must equally affect the other, although, as I have already observed, he is in no manner necessary to the misfortune. Wherefore, as the whole person is affected by the pain of the foot, or any other member of the human body; and the head, though no way concerned in the cause, be a fellow-sufferer with the ankle when it is hurt; by the same rule, an husband, being a part of the same whole, must bear a share of his wife's dishonour; for as all the honours and disgraces of this life proceed from flesh and blood, the infamy of a vicious woman, being of the same origin, must be shared by her husband, who ought to be looked upon as a dishonoured person, although he be utterly ignorant of the guilt. Reflect, therefore, Anselmo, on the danger into which you bring yourself, by seeking to disturb the peace and tranquillity of your virtuous wife. Reflect upon the vanity and impertinence of that curiosity, which prompts you to awaken and stir up those humours that now lie tamed and quiet in the bosom of your chaste spouse. Consider, that in this rash adventure, your gain must be very small, but your loss may be so great, that I leave it unmentioned, because I want words to express its estimation. On the whole, if what I have said be insufficient to divert you from your mischievous design, I desire you will chuse some other instrument of your misfortune and disgrace; for I will not undertake the office, though, by my refusal, I should even lose your friendship, which is dearer to me than any thing upon earth.

‘ Here the virtuous and prudent Lothario left off speaking, and Anselmo remained in such confusion
and

and perplexity, that for sometime, he could not answer one word ; at length, however, he broke silence, saying, " I have listened, my friend Lothario, as you may have perceived, with great attention to all you had to say, and by your arguments, examples, and comparisons, am fully convinced, not only of your great discretion, but also of that perfection of friendship to which you have attained: I see also, and own, that in refusing your counsel, and following my own, I avoid the good and pursue the evil. This truth being acknowledged, you must consider me as a person afflicted with that infirmity, which induces some women to swallow earth, chalk, coals, and other things of a worse nature, which, if loathsome to the sight, how much more disagreeable must they be to the taste. Wherefore there is an absolute necessity for using some method of cure, which you may easily effect, by beginning to solicit the love of Camilla, though coldly and feignedly ; and, sure, she cannot be so frail as to surrender her virtue at the first encounter. With this slight attempt I shall rest satisfied, and you fulfil the duty of friendship, not only in giving me new life, but also in dissuading me from being the cause of my own dishonour. Nay, you are obliged to comply with my request, by this other consideration, that determined as I am to put my design into execution, you ought not to allow me to communicate this extravagant resolution to any other person, lest I run the risk of losing that honor which you endeavour to preserve ; and, as to your suffering in the opinion of Camilla, by attempting to seduce her, that is a reflection of small importance, because, when her integrity is proved, you can soon inform her of our whole contrivance ; consequently, regain and repossess the former place you held in her esteem. Since, therefore, by adventuring so little, it is in your power to give me so much satisfaction, I hope you will not refuse the office even if it was attended with more inconvenience ; for I have already told you, that I shall look upon the affair as concluded, whenever you shall have made the first attempt."

Lothario seeing him fixed in his resolution, even after he had exhausted all his rhetorick to dissuade him from it; and fearing he would execute his threat of imparting his unhappy design to some other person, determined to prevent a greater misfortune, by complying with his desire; purposing, however, to manage the business in such a manner, as to satisfy Anselmo, without altering the sentiment of his wife. With this view, he told Anselmo that he should have no occasion to communicate his intention to any other man; for he, Lothario, would undertake the affair, and begin when he pleased. Anselmo, embracing his friend with great tenderness and affection, thanked him as much for his compliance, as if he had granted him some vast favour; and it was concerted between them, that Lothario should begin the enterprize the very next day, when Anselmo would give him time and opportunity of being alone with Camilla, that he might speak to her with freedom; and also supply him with money and jewels, that with such presents he might promote his suit; he moreover, advised him to attempt her by music, and write verses in her praise; or if that would be too much trouble for the gallant, he himself would compose them for the purpose. Lothario undertook every thing, but with a very different intention from what Anselmo supposed; and the agreement being made they returned to the house of this last where they found Camilla waiting with great anxiety for her husband, who had that day tarried longer than usual abroad. Lothario soon after went home to his own lodgings, leaving his friend as happy as himself was perplexed how to contrive a scheme for bringing this affair to a fortunate issue; but that night he fell upon an expedient to deceive Anselmo, without giving offence to his wife.

Next day he went to dine with his friend, and was very kindly received by Camilla, who entertained him with great cordiality, as her husband's intimate companion. Dinner being ended, and the table withdrawn, Anselmo rising up, desired Lothario to stay with Camilla till his return from an indispensable

dispensable piece of business, that would detain him an hour and a half. Camilla entreated him to defer it until another time, and Lothario offered to go along with him; but he was deaf to both, pressing Lothario to let him go, while he should wait at his house till he came back, for he wanted to talk with him upon a subject of the last importance; at the same time desiring Camilla to keep Lothario company till his return; in short, he so well feigned the necessity, or rather folly, of his absence, that nobody could have suspected the deceit. He accordingly went out, and left Camilla and his friend by themselves, for the rest of the family had gone to dinner; so that Lothario seeing himself within the lists, according to Anselmo's desire, with his fair enemy, whose beauty alone was powerful enough to overcome a whole squadron of armed knights, it may be easily conceived what reason he had to fear, yet all he did was to lean his head on his hand, while his elbow rested upon the arm of the chair in which he sat, and after having begged pardon for his ill-manners, to tell Camilla he would take a nap till Anselmo's return. She said he would be more at his ease in a couch than in the chair, and advised him to walk into a chamber where he would find one. This offer, however, he declined, and slept where he was till the return of his friend, who finding Camilla in her own apartment, and Lothario asleep, concluded that, by his long stay, he had given them time not only to speak, but also to take their repose, and was impatient for Lothario's waking, that he might carry him out to walk, and enquire about his own fortune.

Every thing succeeded to his wish: when his friend awoke, they went forth together, and he put every question to him that his curiosity suggested. Lothario answered, that thinking it improper to explain himself on the first occasion, he had done nothing but praised Camilla's beauty, which, together with her discretion, he told her engrossed the conversation of the whole city; this he imagined was the most prudent beginning, as it might prepossess her in his favour, and dispose her to listen to him

another time with pleasure ; being the same artifice which is practised by the devil, who, when he would seduce those who are on their guard, transforms himself from an imp of darkness into an angel of light, and flattering them with specious appearances, at length discovers his cloven foot, and succeeds in his design, provided his deceit be not detected in the beginning.—This declaration was altogether satisfactory to Anselmo, who said, he would give him the same opportunity every day, without quitting the house, in which he would employ himself so artfully, that Camilla should never suspect his design. Many days past, in which though Lothario never opened his mouth on the subject to Camilla, he told Anselmo that he had made many efforts, but could never perceive in her the least tendency to weakness, or obtain the least shadow of hope ; on the contrary, that she had threatened, if he did not lay aside the wicked design, to disclose the whole affair to her husband.’ “Very well,” said Anselmo ; “hitherto she is proof against words ; we must now try whether or not she can resist works also. To-morrow you shall have two thousand crowns in gold, for a present to her ; and as much more to purchase jewels, for a bait ; these are things with which all beautiful women are captivated ; for, be they ever so chaste, they love finery and gay apparel ; if she withstands that temptation, I will rest satisfied, and give you no further trouble.”

‘Lothario promised to go through with the enterprize, now that he had begun, though he was persuaded he should be fatigued and baffled in the execution. Next day he received four thousand crowns, and as many perplexities along with them ; for he did not know what lye he should next invent : however, he determined to tell his friend, that Camilla was as invincible to presents as to words, and that he should give himself no farther vexation, since all his endeavours were thrown away to no purpose ; but fortune, which conducted matters in another manner ordained that Anselmo, one day, after having, according to custom, left Lothario and his wife by themselves

themselves, and gone to his own chamber, should peep through the key-hole, and listen to their conversation; it was then he perceived, that in half an hour and more, Lothario did not speak one word; neither would he have opened his mouth, had he remained a whole age in the same situation.— From hence he concluded, that every thing his friend had told him of Camilla's replies, was mere fiction; but, to be still more assured, he came out of his chamber, and calling Lothario aside, asked what news he had, and how Camilla stood affected to him? He replied, that he was resolved to drop the business entirely, for she had checked him with such bitterness and indignation, that he had no mind to return to the charge.—“Ah, Lothario! Lothario!” said Anselmo, “how much you have failed in the duty of friendship, and abused the confidence I have reposed in your affection! I have been all this time looking through the key-hole of that door, and perceived that you have not spoken one word to Camilla, from whence I suspect that your first declaration is yet to come; and if that, be the case, as without doubt it is, wherefore have you thus deceived me; and in so doing, prevented me from other means to satisfy my desire?” He said no more, but this was sufficient to cover Lothario with shame and confusion; who, thinking his honour concerned in being convicted of a lie, swore to Anselmo, he would from that moment take the charge of giving him the satisfaction he required, without the least equivocation, as he might perceive by watching him narrowly; though there would be no occasion for using such diligence, because his future behaviour in that affair would acquit him of all suspicion.

‘Anselmo gave credit to his protestation; and, that his opportunities might be more secure, and less subject to interruption, resolved to absent himself from his own house for eight days, during which he proposed to visit a friend who lived in a village not far from the city; and whom he desired to invite him to his house with the most earnest intreaties, that

that he might excuse himself to Camilla for his absence. Unfortunate and imprudent Anselmo ! what art thou doing ? what art thou contriving and concerting ? Consider that thou art acting against thyself, planning thy own dishonour and perdition. Your wife Camilla is virtuous and sober, and you possess her at present in quiet, enjoying uninterrupted pleasure ; her inclinations never ramble beyond the walls of your own house ; you are her paradise upon earth, the goal of her desires, the accomplishment of her wishes, and the standard by which she measures her will, adjusting it in all respects according to your pleasure and the direction of Heaven. Since the mine of her honour, beauty, modesty, and virtue, yields thee, without trouble, all the riches which it contains, or thou canst desire ; why wouldst thou, by digging in search of a new and unheard of treasure, risk the fall or destruction of the whole, which is sustained by the feeble props of female constancy ? Remember it is but just, that he who builds on impossibilities should be denied the privilege of any other foundation ; as the poet hath better expressed it in the following couplets—

“ In death I sought new life to find,
 “ And health where pale distemper pin’d :
 “ I look’d for freedom in the gaol,
 “ And faith where perjuries prevail :
 “ But Fate supreme, whose stern decree
 “ To sorrow match’d my destiny,
 “ All possible relief withdrew,
 “ Because th’ impossible I kept in view.”

‘ Next day Anselmo went to the country, after having told Camilla, that in his absence Lothario would take charge of the family, and dine with her every day ; he therefore desired her to treat him with all the respect due to his own person. Camilla, being a woman of honour and discretion, was disgusted at this order, and bade him consider how unseemly it was for another man to sit at the head of his table in his absence ; at the same time begging, that if his directions proceeded from his diffidence in her capacity, he would for once put her management

management to the trial, and be convinced, by experience, that she was equal to a more important charge. Anselmo replied, that such was his pleasure, and her province was to bow the head and obey; upon which, she, though unwillingly, submitted. Next day he set out accordingly, and Lothario went to his house, where he met with a very kind and honourable reception from Camilla, who never gave him an opportunity of being alone with her, but was always surrounded by her servants, generally attended by her own maid, whose name was Leonela, for whom her mistress had a particular affection, because they had been brought up together from their infancy, in the house of Camilla's parents; and when she married Anselmo, she accompanied her to his house in quality of waiting-woman.

' During the first three days Lothario did not declare himself, although he had opportunities immediately after the table was uncovered, while the servants were at dinner, which Camilla always ordered them to finish with all expedition. Nay, she gave directions to Leonela, to dine every day before the cloth was laid for herself, that she might always be in waiting; but her maid's thoughts were too much engrossed by her own amusements, the enjoyment of which required such time and opportunity, as often hindered her from obeying the commands of her mistress, so that she frequently behaved as if she had received orders to leave them alone; but the dignified presence of Camilla, the gravity of her countenance, and awfulness of person, were such as effectually bridled Lothario's tongue: yet the energy of virtue, in having this very effect, redounded the more to the disadvantage of them both; for, tho' his tongue was restricted, his thoughts had a full and free opportunity of contemplating at leisure the charms both of her mind and her person, which were sufficient to captivate not only an heart of flesh, but even a statue of stone.

' Lothario, by gazing at her during those opportunities, beheld how worthy she was to be beloved;
and

and this conviction began gradually to sap his regard for his friend, so that he made a thousand resolutions to quit the city, and go where he should never more be seen by Anselmo, or be exposed to danger from the beauty of his wife; but all these were baffled by the pleasure he had already felt, in seeing and admiring her charms; he constrained himself, and combated his own inclinations, in order to expel and efface that satisfaction: when he was alone he condemned his own madness, and reproached himself as a false friend and a worthless Christian; he made a thousand reflections and comparisons between himself and Anselmo; and they all terminated in this conclusion, that the madness and rash confidence of his friend greatly exceeded his own infidelity, and that if he could excuse himself to Heaven, for what he intended to do, as easily as to mankind, he had no reason to dread any punishment for the crime. In short, the beauty and other accomplishments of Camilla, together with the opportunity which the ignorant husband put into his hands, entirely overthrew the integrity of Lothario; who, giving way at once to the dictates of his passion, began at the end of three days, during which he had been at continual war with his desires, to address himself to Camilla with such disorder and amorous discourse, that she was utterly astonished, and rising up, went to her own chamber without answering one word. But this coyness did not abate Lothario's hope, which always increases with a man's love; on the contrary, he redoubled his efforts; while she, perceiving him behave so wide of expectation, did not well know what conduct to espouse; but, thinking it would be both unseemly and unsafe in her, to grant him another opportunity, she determined that very night to send a message to her husband, and actually dispatched a servant to him with the following letter.

CHAPTER VII.

The Continuation of the Novel called the Impertinent Curiosity.

"**I**T is a common observation, that an army without a general, and a garrison without a chief, make but a very indifferent appearance ; but I say, that a young married woman without a husband makes a worse, especially when his absence is not the effect of absolute necessity : for my own part, I find myself so uneasy, and unable to support our separation, that if you do not return immediately, I must go and pass my time at my father's house, though I should leave yours without a guard ; for I believe he that you have left, if he was designed for that purpose, hath more regard to his own pleasure than to your advantage ; and since you are wife, I have nothing more to say, nor is it proper I should."

' When Anselmo received this letter, he was convinced that Lothario had began the enterprize, and that his wife had behaved according to his wish ; rejoiced beyond measure at this information, he answered by a verbal message, that she should by no means leave the house, for he would return in a very little time. Camilla was astonished at this reply, which perplexed her more than ever, as she durst neither stay in her own house, nor go to her father's ; for, in staying at home, she endangered her honour. and in going to her parents she transgressed the commands of her husband. In fine, she resolved upon that which was worst of all, namely, to remain where she was ; determined not to avoid Lothario, that the servants might not observe her situation ; and she was already sorry for what she had written to Anselmo, being afraid he would imagine Lothario had perceived some levity in her conduct, which encouraged him to lay aside the decorum he ought to have preserved. Confident of her own virtue, she trusted to God and her consci-

ous

ous prudence, by the help of which she thought she could in silence resist all the solicitations of Lothario without giving her husband any further information, lest it should involve him in some trouble or dangerous dispute ; nay, she was even industrious in inventing some excuse for Lothario, in case Anselmo should ask the reason that induced her to write such a letter.

‘ With these sentiments, which were more honourable than prudent and advantageous, she next day sat listening to Lothario, who exerted himself in such a manner, as to shake her fortitude, which, with all her virtue, was barely sufficient to hinder her eyes from giving manifest indications of the amorous compassion that his tears and addressees had awakened in her breast. All this tenderness, which Lothario observed, inflamed his passions the more ; and thinking there was a necessity for shortening the siege, while this opportunity of Anselmo’s absence lasted, he assaulted her pride with the praises of her beauty ; for nothing sooner succeeds in overthrowing the embattled towers of female vanity, than vanity itself, employed by the tongue of adulation : in short, he so assiduously undermined the fortress of her virtue, and plied it with such irresistible engines, that though she had been made of brass, she must have surrendered at mercy. He wept, intreated, promised, flattered, feigned, and importuned, with such earnest expressions of love, as conquered all her reserve : at last he obtained a compleat triumph, which, though what he least expected, was what of all things he most ardently desired ; she yielded—the chaste Camilla yielded ! But what wonder ? since even Lothario’s friendship gave way : a clear and incontestible proof, that love is to be conquered by flight alone ; and that no person whatever ought to engage such a powerful adversary hand to hand, because nothing but force divine can subdue that human power.

‘ Leonela alone was privy to the weakness of her mistress, which the two new lovers and false friends could not possibly conceal from her knowledge ;
and

and Lothario did not chuse to tell Camilla the contrivance of Anselmo, who had given him the opportunity of accomplishing his design; that she might not undervalue his love, by supposing that he courted her by accident, without being at first really enamoured of her charms. Anselmo returning in a few days, did not perceive the loss of that, which, though he preserved with the least care, he prized above all other possessions: but going in quest of Lothario, whom he found in his own lodging, after a mutual embrace, he desired he would tell him the news that must determine his life or death. "The news which I have to give to you, my friend," said Lothario, "are these; you have a wife who truly deserves to be the pattern and queen of all good women. The expressions I used to her were spent in the air, my promises were despised, my presents rejected, and some tears that I feigned, most heartily ridiculed; in short, Camilla is the sum of all beauty, and the casket in which are deposited honour, affability, modesty, and all the qualifications that dignify and adorn a woman of virtue. Here, take back your money, which I have had no occasion to use; the chastity of your spouse is not to be shaken by such mean considerations as those of promises and presents; be satisfied, Anselmo, and make no more unprofitable trials; since you have dry-shod crossed the sea of those doubts and suspicions which are and may be entertained of woman, seek not to plunge yourself anew into the dangerous gulf of fresh difficulties, by using another pilot to make a second trial of the strength and tightness of the vessel which you have received from Heaven to perform the voyage of this life, but consider yourself as in a safe harbour, where you ought to secure yourself with the anchor of sound reflection, and remain until you are called upon to pay that tax from which no human rank can exempt you."

Anselmo was infinitely rejoiced at this information of Lothario, which he believed as implicitly as if it had been pronounced by an oracle; but, nevertheless, he besought him to continue his ad-

dress, merely for curiosity and amusement, though not with the same eagerness and diligence which he had used before ; he desired him to write verses in praise of Camilla, under the name, Chloris promising to tell his wife, that he, Lothario, was in love with a lady whom he celebrated under that fictitious name, in order to preserve the decorum due to her character ; and he assured him, that if Lothario did not chuse to take the trouble of making verses, he himself would compose them for the occasion, " You shall not need," said Lothario ; " the muses are not quite so averse, but they visit me sometimes : you may tell Camilla what you have mentioned, concerning my pretended love ; and as for the verses, if not adequate to the subject, they shall at all events be the best I can make."

' This agreement being concerted between the impertinent husband and treacherous friend, Anselmo returned to his own house, and asked Camilla, what she wondered he had not mentioned before, namely, the meaning of that letter which she had dispatched to him in the country. She answered, that she then fancied Lothario looked at her with more freedom than he used to take when Anselmo was at home : but now she was undeceived, and convinced of it's being no more than mere imagination, for he had of late avoided all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo said she might make herself entirely easy from that quarter ; for he knew that Lothario was in love with a lady of fashion in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris ; and even, if he was free of any such engagements, there was nothing to be feared from the honour of Lothario, and the friendship subsisting between them. If Camilla had not been previously advertised by her secret gallant, of this supposed love of Chloris, with which he intended to hoodwink her husband, that he might sometimes indulge himself in her own praise under the cover of that name, she would, without doubt, have been distracted with jealousy ; but thus instructed, she heard him without surprize or concern.

' Next

‘ Next day, while they were at dinner, Anselmo intreated his friend to repeat some of the verses he had composed in praise of Chloris, who being utterly unknown to Camilla, he might securely say what he pleased. “ Though she were of her acquaintance,” answered Lothario, “ I should not think myself bound to conceal my passion ; for, when a lover praises the beauty, and at the same time bewails the cruelty of his mistress, her reputation can suffer no prejudice ; but, be that as it will, I own, I yesterday wrote a song on the ingratitude of Chloris, which you shall hear.

I.

“ WHEN night extends her silent reign,
“ And sleep vouchsafes the world to blefs,
“ To Heav’n and Chloris I complain
“ Of dire and affluent distress.

II.

“ When Phœbus, led by rosy morn,
“ At first, his radiant visage shews,
“ With tears, and sighs, and groans forlorn,
“ My soul the bitter plaint renews.

III.

“ When from his bright meridian throne,
“ The dazzling rays descend amain,
“ With aggravated grief I moan,
“ And night brings back the woeful strain.
“ Thus to my vows and prayers I find
“ My Chloris deaf, and Heav’n unkind.”

“ The song was approved by Camilla, and much more so by her husband, who applauded it to the skies, and observed, that the lady must be excessively cruel, who could resist such a true and pathetic complaint. “ What !” said Camilla, “ is every thing true that we are told by the poets when they are in love ?”—“ What they rehearse as poets,” answered Lothario, “ is not always truth ; but what they affirm as lovers, is always from the heart.” “ You are certainly in the right,” replied Anselmo, with a view of supporting and giving sanction to Lothario’s sentiments, in the opinion of Camilla, whose indifference about her husband’s artifice was now equal to her love for his pretended friend.

Pleased therefore with his performances, because she very well knew that his inclinations and compositions were inspired by and addressed to her, who was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he had any more songs or verses, to repeat them. "I have another," said Lothario, "but I believe it is not so good; or, rather, it is less tolerable than the last. However, you shall judge for yourself; here it is.

I.

"Yes, cruel maid! I welcome death,
 "And tho' I perish undeplor'd,
 "Thy beauty with my latest breath
 "Shall be applauded and ador'd.

II.

"Tho' lost in dark oblivion's shade,
 "Bereft of favour, life and fame,
 "My faithful heart, when open laid,
 "Will shew thine image and thy name.

III.

"These reliques I preserve with care,
 "My comfort in disastrous fate;
 "For, steel'd and whetted by despair,
 "My love new force acquires from hate.
 "Unhappy those! who, darkling, sail
 "Where stars, and ports, and pilots fail."

"This song was commended as much as the first, by Anselmo, who in this manner added link to link of the chain with which he enslaved himself, and secured his own dishonour; for then Lothario disgraced him most, when he thought himself most honoured, and every step that Camilla descended towards the very center of contempt, she, in the opinion of her husband, mounted to the very summit of virtuous reputation. About this time, happening to be alone with her maid, "I am ashamed, dear Leonela," said she, "when I consider how I have undervalued myself; for I ought to have made Lothario employ a great deal of time in purchasing the entire possession of my favours, which I so willingly surrendered at once; and I am afraid that he will look upon my sudden yielding as the effect of levity, without reflecting upon the violence of his

own

own addressees, which it was impossible to resist.”—
“ Let not that give you the least disturbance, Madam,” answered Leonela, “ for there is no reason why a thing should lose it’s estimation, by being freely given, if it is actually good in its kind and worthy of esteem ; nay, it is a common saying, That he who gives freely, gives twice.” “ There is also another common observation,” replied Camilla, “ That which is easily got is little valued.” “ You are not at all affected by that observation,” resumed Leonela, “ for love, they say, sometimes flies, sometimes walks, runs with one, creeps with another, warms a third, burns a fourth, wounding some, and slaying others. In one moment it begins, performs, and concludes its career ; lays siege in the morning to a fortress, which is surrendered before night, there being no fortress that can withstand it’s power. This being the case, what cause have you to be alarmed or afraid ? This was the power that assisted Lothario, by making use of my master’s absence, as the instrument of his success ; and what love had determined, must of necessity have been concluded during that period, before Anselmo could, by his return, prevent the perfection of the work. Opportunity is the best minister for executing the designs of love ; and is employed in all his undertakings, especially in the beginning of them. This I know to be true, more by experience than hear-say ; and I shall one day tell you, Madam, that I am a girl of flesh and blood, as well as your ladyship. Besides, your ladyship did not yield until you had discerned in the looks, sighs, protestations, promises, and presents of Lothario, his whole soul undisguised, and adorned with such virtues as rendered him worthy of your love. Let not, therefore, these scrupulous and whining reflections harass your imagination ; but assure yourself, that Lothario’s love and yours are mutual : so that you may think yourself extremely happy, in being caught in the amorous snare by a man of worth and honour, who not only possesses the four quali-

ties beginning with S*, which ought to be the case of all true lovers, but also a whole alphabet of accomplishments. Listen, and you shall hear how cleverly I will recount them. He is, in my simple opinion, amiable, benevolent, courageous, diverting, enamoured, firm, gay, honourable, illustrious, loyal, mettlesome, noble, obedient, princely, qualified, rich, and the S. S. as I have already observed. Then, he is trusty, vigilant; the X does not suit him, because it is a harsh letter; Y stands for youth, and Z for zeal, in his attachment to you."

Camilla laughed at the alphabet of her maid, whom she found more knowing in the affairs of love than she pretended to be; and this knowledge indeed, she confessed, disclosing to her mistress an intrigue that she carried on with a young man of a good family in town. Camilla was disturbed at this information, fearing that her honour ran some risk from their correspondence; and when she pressed her to confess, whether or not it had been brought to the last extremity, she, without the least symptom of shame, answered in the affirmative: for, it is very certain, that the failings of mistresses divest their servants of all modesty; because, seeing their ladies trip, they think themselves intitled to halt, without being at the trouble to conceal their defect. Camilla, thus circumstanced, could fall upon no other expedient than that of cautioning her maid against betraying her to the person who was her gallant, and beseeching her to keep her own intrigue secret, that it might not fall under the observation of Anselmo and Lothario.

* Leonela promised to be upon her guard, but managed her affairs with so little discretion, that she confirmed Camilla in the apprehension of losing her reputation by the carelessness of her maid; for the bold and immodest Leonela, seeing that her lady's conduct was not the same as formerly, had the assurance to introduce and conceal her lover in the house, conscious, that although her mistress should

* *Sensato, secreto, sobrepasado, senzera*; Sensible, secret, surpassing, and sincere.

should perceive, she durst not detect him in that situation. Among other disadvantages incurred by the slips of women of fashion, they become slaves to their own servants, and find themselves obliged to connive at their impudence and vice.

‘ This was the very case of Camilla, who, though she more than once observed Leonela engaged with her gallant, in one of the chambers, far from reprimanding her on that score, she gave opportunities of concealing him, and did all she could to prevent his being seen by her husband. But all their caution could not screen him from the notice of Lothario; who, perceiving him come out of the house one morning at break of day, and not knowing who he was, at first mistook him for a phantom; but seeing him run away, and seek to hide himself with care and concern, he soon changed that simple opinion for another, which would have ruined them all, had not Camilla found out an expedient to prevent their destruction. He was so far from thinking, that this man, whom he saw coming out of Anselmo’s house at such an unseasonable hour, had gone in on Leonela’s account, that he did not even remember there was such a person in the world; on the contrary, he was firmly persuaded, that Camilla, who yielded so easily to his addresses, had acted in the same manner to some other person; for this additional misfortune attends a loose woman, that she loses her credit even with the man by whose importunities and intreaties her honour was subdued. Nay, he believes, that she will be more easily won by another than by him, and implicitly credits every suspicion that may arise from that unjust inference. On this occasion, Lothario’s good sense failed, and all his caution seemed to vanish; since, regardless of every thing that was right or reasonable, without farther examination, he hid him to Anselmo before he was up, where, impatient and blind with the jealous fury that preyed upon his entrails, and inflamed with the desire of being revenged upon Camilla, who had given him no offence, he expressed himself thus.

“ You

"You must know, Anselmo, that for some days past, I have had a continual struggle with myself, endeavouring to suppress that which I no longer either can or ought to conceal from your knowledge. The fortress of Camilla is at last surrendered, and submitted entirely to the dominion of my will. This I have delayed imparting to you, until I should be certain whether her compliance was owing to some transient flash of affection, or to the desire of trying the sincerity of those addresses which, by your own direction, were carried on; and I likewise concluded, that if she was a woman of honour and virtue, as we both imagined, she would ere now have given you an account of my solicitation. But finding that still undone, I take it for granted she means to keep her promise of giving me an interview in the wardrobe the very next time you go to the country; (and here it was where Camilla actually used to entertain him;) but I should not wish that you would run precipitately into any scheme of vengeance. However as the crime is committed in thought only before an opportunity offers of performing that promise, Camilla may change her mind, and repent of her weakness. Wherefore, as you have hitherto, in whole or in part, followed my advice, I hope you will treasure up and observe one which I shall now offer, that you may, without the least possibility of being deceived, carefully and cautiously satisfy yourself, so as to take such measures as your prudence shall suggest. You may pretend that you are going as usual, for two or three days to the country, and in the mean time conceal yourself in the wardrobe, where you will find tapestry and plenty of other things for the purpose; from thence you, with your own eyes, as I with mine, will observe the conduct of Camilla, and if unhappily you should find more cause to fear than to hope, you may in person revenge your own wrongs, with silence, safety, and discretion."

'Anselmo was thunderstruck at this declaration of Lothario, which came upon him when he least expected it; for he already looked upon Camilla as
a conqueror

a conqueror in the fictitious assaults of his friend, and had actually began to enjoy the glory of her triumph. After having stood silent for a long time, with his eyes fixed upon the ground, "Lothario," said he, "you have acted up to the expectation of my friendship: I will adhere to your advice in every thing; do what you please; I hope you will keep this unexpected affair as secret as the nature of it requires."

His false friend promised to observe the caution; but soon as he quitted the apartment, repented of every thing he had said, reflecting how foolishly he had proceeded, and that he might have punished Camilla by means less cruel and dishonourable. He cursed his own folly, condemned his precipitation, and endeavour to find out some expedient to undo what he had done, or at least bring it to some favourable issue. At length, he resolved to disclose the whole to Camilla, as there wanted not opportunities of being with her alone; and that very day being together, she made use of the first that happened, addressing herself to him in this manner. "Know, my dear Lothario, that my heart is ready to burst with one affliction, which is so grievous that it will be a wonder if I survive it: Leonela is arrived to such a pitch of impudence, that every night she introduces a gallant into the house, and remains with him till morning, very much at the expence of my reputation, as the field is left open for any malicious construction, upon seeing a man come out of my house at such unseasonable hours; and the misfortune is, I dare neither chide nor chastise her for audacity; for her being privy to our correspondence puts a bridle in my mouth, obliging me to be silent on the subject of her folly, from which I fear some mischance will befall us."

When Camilla began this discourse, Lothario imagined it was an artifice to deceive and persuade him that the man he had seen coming out of the house had been there on Leonela's account only; but, seeing his mistress weep, and in the utmost affection entreat him to find out some remedy for this inconvenience, he was convinced of the truth, and covered with

with shame and remorse for what he had done ; nevertheless, he desired Camilla to make herself easy, and promised to fall upon some method to curb Leonela's insolence. He then told her what, instigated by the rage of jealousy, he had disclosed to Anselmo, who, by his appointment, was to conceal himself in the wardrobe, that he might have an incontestible proof of her infidelity : he begged pardon for his madness, with advice how to remedy it, and to extricate himself from the labyrinth in which he was involved by his own imprudence. Camilla was astonished at the discourse of Lothario, whom she chid and reprimanded with great reason and resentment, for the groundless suspicion which had driven him to such a mad and mischievous resolution ; but women having naturally more invention than men can boast of, either for good or bad occasion, though sometimes they fail in premeditated schemes, Camilla instantly thought of a cure for this seemingly incurable dilemma, and bade Lothario prevail upon her husband to conceal himself in the appointed place the very next day ; for she hoped to reap such advantage from his concealment, as that for the future they should enjoy each other without the least fear or interruption. She, therefore, without disclosing to her lover the whole of her plan, desired him to take care, when Anselmo was hid, to come at Leonela's call, and answer every question she should ask, in the same manner as he would reply if he did not know that her husband was within hearing. Lothario insisted upon knowing the particulars of her scheme, that he might with more security and success perform his cue ; but Camilla assured him he had nothing to do but answer her questions with truth and sincerity ; being unwilling to make him previously acquainted with her design, lest he should disapprove of that which to her seemed so necessary, and recommend another which perhaps she might not think so effectual. Accordingly, Lothario took his leave ; and next day Anselmo, under pretence of going to his friend's country-house, set out, but soon returned to his hiding-place ; Camilla and her maid
having

having purposely given him an opportunity of getting in unseen. There he remained in a state of perturbation, which may be easily conceived to harass the breast of a man who expected to see with his own eyes the bowels of his honour dissected, and found himself on the brink of losing that supreme bliss which he thought he possessed in his beloved Camilla.

‘ She and her maid, by this time, certified of his being there, went to the wardrobe, which Camilla no sooner entered, than heaving a profound sigh, “ Dear Leonela,” said she, “ rather than execute the design which I conceal from your knowledge, that you may not endeavour to prevent it, would it not be better for you to take this poignard of Anselmo, and plunge it in my unfortunate bosom? Yet do not, Leonela; for it were unreasonable that I should be punished for another’s crime; I want first to know what the daring and licentious eyes of Lothario have discerned in my conduct, that should encourage him to declare a passion so guilty as that which he hath owned, so much to my dishonour and the prejudice of his friend. Go to that window, Leonela, and beckon to him, for doubtless he is now in the street, expecting to succeed in his wicked intention; but I shall first execute mine, which is equally honourable and severe.” “ Alas, madam!” answered the cunning and well-instructed Leonela, “ how do you intend to use that fatal poignard? are you determined to take away your own life, or that of Lothario? by sacrificing either the one or the other, you will entirely ruin your own reputation. You should rather stifle your wrongs, than give that wicked wretch an opportunity of finding us here alone: consider, Madam, that we are but weak women, and he a determined man, who, blinded by his guilty passion, may by force deprive you of that which you value more than life, before you can execute your purpose upon him. A plague upon my master Anselmo, for allowing that impudent fellow to be so free in his house! besides, Madam, should you kill him, as I believe you intend to do, what shall we do with him after he is dead?”—

dead?"—"Nothing, my friend," replied Camilla, "but let Anselmo bury him; for he ought to take pleasure in the task of interring his own infamy. Go, and beckon to him, I say, for every moment I delay my just revenge, seems to injure afresh that fidelity which I owe to my husband."

All this conversation was overheard by Anselmo, whose sentiments were entirely changed by what Camilla, said; and when he understood that she intended to kill Lothario, he was inclined to come out and discover himself, in order to prevent the deed; but he was diverted from that resolution by the desire of seeing the issue of his wife's gallant and virtuous determination; purposing, however, to appear seasonably enough for the safety of his friend.

About this time Camilla, throwing herself upon a couch, was seized with a violent fit, during which Leonela wept bitterly, exclaiming, "Ah! woe is me! must I then see, expiring in these unfortunate arms, the flower of human virtue, the queen of excellent wives, the pattern of chastity!" with other epithets of the same kind, which nobody could have heard, without esteeming her the most faithful and afflicted damsel upon earth, and her mistress another persecuted Penelope. Camilla, having soon recovered from her fit, said to her woman, "Why don't you go and call this the most faithful friend that ever was seen by the day, or shrouded by the night? Make haste; go, run, fly: let not the fire of my rage be consumed by your delay, and the just vengeance I mean to take evaporate in curses and unsubstantial threats." "I go," answered Leonela, "but you must first give me the poignard, lest, in my absence, you do a deed to make all those who love you weep to the end of their lives." "Go, dear Leonela," replied her mistress, "and fear nothing; for although, in your opinion, I may be rash and even unreasonable, in thus resenting the affront upon my honour; I shall not behave like that Lucretia, who, 'tis said, killed herself, though innocent, without having first punished the villainous cause of her misfortune. If I must die, I will at least fall fully
revenged

revenged of him who is the occasion of my being here, to bewail his audacious behaviour, which, I am sure, proceeded from no misconduct of mine."

' Many intreaties did she use, before Leonela would go and call Lothario, but at length she prevailed; the maid went out to seek him, and, in her absence, Camilla uttered the following soliloquy. " Good Heaven! would it not have been more prudent to dismiss Lothario as usual, than to give him this occasion of thinking me vicious and immodest, even though that opinion can only last until I have an opportunity of undeceiving him? Yes, certainly; but I shall not think myself revenged, nor the honour of my husband sufficiently vindicated, if he escapes so smooth and clean from this snare into which his wicked inclinations have decoyed him. Let the traitor pay with his life for the enterprize of his lascivious desire; the world shall know, if even the affair be made public, that Camilla not only preserved her affection for her husband inviolate, but also took vengeance on the man who thought to impair it. Yet methinks, I ought to disclose the whole to Anselmo; but I have already touched upon the subject, in the letter I sent to him when he was in the country; and his omitting to apply a remedy to the evil I then hinted at, must certainly be owing to his own integrity and unsuspecting heart, which would not suffer him to believe, that the breast of such a constant friend could harbour one thought to the prejudice of his honour; indeed, this was my own opinion, until his behaviour became intolerably licentious, and his presents, promises, and tears, fully manifested his guilty purpose. But, wherefore these reflections? does a gallant resolution stand in need of hesitating advice? No! traitor, avaunt! hither vengeance! enter, thou false perfidious wretch, come, quick, be speedy, die, and let the consequence be what it will! Pure and unspotted I came into the possession of him whom Heaven appointed to be my husband and my lord, and equally pure shall I leave his embrace, though bathed in my own chaste blood, and embued in the tainted gore of the falsest friend

that ever friendship saw?" So saying, she brandished the drawn dagger in her hand, and stalked across the room with such disordered steps and violent gestures, that she seemed to have lost her senses, and looked more like a desperate ruffian than a delicate wife.

All this transport and agitation was perceived, with astonishment, by Anselmo, where he stood concealed behind the tapestry; he thought he had now seen and heard enough to dispel suspicions of a stronger kind than those he entertained; and even wished that the proof might proceed no farther, by Lothario's failing to keep the appointment; for he was afraid that some sudden unlucky accident might happen. Being therefore on the point of shewing himself, and running to embrace and undeceive his wife, he was prevented by seeing Leonela return with his friend, whom Camilla no sooner beheld, than drawing a line before her, with the dagger, she said, take notice, Lothario, if you attempt to pass this line, or even approach it, the moment I perceive your intention, I will plunge the poignard in my breast. Without offering the least reply, therefore, to this declaration, I desire you will listen to some questions I mean to ask, which you may answer as you shall think proper. In the first place tell me, Lothario, if you know my husband Anselmo, and what station he maintains in your opinion? and then be as explicit in your sentiments of me. Answer without perturbation or difficulty, for the questions I ask are easily solved."

' Lothario was not so ignorant, but that he had conceived her design, from the moment of her desiring him to advise Anselmo to conceal himself; and therefore his replies were so seasonable and corresponded so exactly with her aim, that this fiction had all the air of the most genuine truth. "Beauteous Camilla," said he "I did not imagine you had sent for me with a view of asking questions so foreign to the purpose for which I come; if you meant to delay the promised bliss, you might have protracted the assignation to a more distant term; for,

for, the nearer the prospect of enjoyment is, the more grievous will the disappointment be : but that you may have no cause to complain of my refusing to answer your demands, I will own that I know your husband Anselmo, with whom I have been intimate from our most tender years. Of the friendship (as you know) subsisting between us, I will say nothing, that I may not bear witness to the wrong which love, the powerful excuse of greater crimes, compels me to commit : you too I know, and rate as high as you can possibly be in his esteem ; for a prize of less value I should not have acted so unbecomingly my own character, or transgressed those laws of perfect friendship, which I have broken and violated, at the instigation of that mischievous and irresistible power."

" Since thou art self-convicted so far," replied Camilla, " thou mortal enemy to all that merits love ! with what face dardest thou appear before her who is the mirror that reflects him, and in which thou oughtest to have seen how little reason and encouragement thou hadst to wrong his honour ; but, unfortunate that I am ! I have found out the cause that induced thee to forget thyself so far ; it must have been some lightness of carriage in me ; immodesty I will not call it, because it could not be the effect of deliberate determination, but must have proceeded from a neglect of some of those forms which women often inadvertently omit before those whom they think they can entertain without ceremony. Otherwise, tell me, traitor, when did I ever answer thy addresses with any word or sign that could awaken in thy breast the least glimpse of hope to accomplish thy infamous aim ? Did I not always reject and reprove thy amorous protestations with rigour and severity ? and when were thy promises and presents believed and accepted ? But, as I think no person could long persevere in such a flagitious intention, without being supported by some sort of hope, I am willing to lay the blame of your impertinence at my own door ; since without doubt, some failure of care in me hath enabled you to exert yours

so long ; and therefore, I will inflict upon myself the punishment that your crime deserves ; but that you may see, in being thus inhuman to myself, it was impossible for me to deal mildly by you, I have invited you hither, to be witness of the sacrifice I mean to offer to the injured honour of my noble husband, whom you have aggrieved to the utmost of your power, I myself being accessory to the wrong, because I have not industriously enough avoided all occasion, if I gave you any, of favouring and countenancing your wicked inclinations. I say, the suspicion I have, that some levity of mine engendered such frantick sentiments in your bosom, gives me the utmost pain, and prompts me to chastise my indiscretion with my own hands, rather than make my fault more public, by submitting to another executioner ; but, if I must perish, my fall shall be accompanied with the death of him whose blood will satisfy the vengeance which I already in some measure enjoy, when I consider that wheresoever I go, I shall have before mine eyes, the victim I offered to the most disinterested justice, in punishing the wretch who hath reduced me to this despair."

' So saying, she assaulted Lothario with incredible force and agility, manifesting such eagerness to plunge the poignard in his breast, that he himself doubted whether her endeavours were feigned or real ; and was actually obliged to exert his whole strength in defending himself from Camilla, who acted this strange imposture so much to the life, that, in order to give it the greater appearance of truth, she resolved to colour it with her own blood ; for seeing, or feigning, that she could not touch Lothario, she cried, " though fate denies me the full satisfaction of my just desire, it cannot rob me of one part of my revenge." With these words, struggling to disengage her dagger-hand, which was held by Lothario, she at last succeeded, and directing her poignard to a part of her body, which she thought she might slightly wound without danger, she sheathed it between her shoulder and left-breast, and fell upon the floor as in a swoon.

Leonela

Leonela and Lothario were astonished and confounded at this event, and still dubious whether or not Camilla was in earnest, when they saw her stretched upon the ground, and bathed in her own blood. Lothario ran, in the utmost fright and consternation, to draw forth the dagger; but perceiving what a superficial wound she had made, he recovered of the terror which had begun to seize him, and could not help admiring anew, the uncommon sagacity, prudence, and discretion, of the beautiful Camilla: that he might therefore proceed in the part he had to act, he began to make long and sorrowful lamentations over the body, as if she had been really dead, imprecating a thousand curses, not only upon himself, but also upon him who was the original cause of this disaster; and as he knew that Anselmo was listening, said such melancholy things, that whoever had heard him, would have pitied his case, as much as that of Camilla, though they had believed her actually dead.

Leonela lifted her up, and laying her on the bed, earnestly entreated Lothario to find some person who would cure her privately; and begged he would advise her, with regard to what she should tell Anselmo, about her lady's wound, in case he should return before she was cured. He said she might tell him what she pleased, for he was then in no condition to give any profitable advice about the matter; he only desired her to fall upon some method of staunching the blood, and declared that for his own part he would go where man should never see him. He accordingly departed with the appearance of infinite grief and anxiety; and when he found himself alone, in a private place, crossed himself with amazement at the invention of Camilla, and the artful behaviour of her maid. He could easily conceive that Anselmo was by this time thoroughly convinced of his having a second Portia for his wife; and was impatient to see him, that they might together extol her behaviour, which, though imposture had more the appearance of truth than any thing of the same kind that had ever been practised.

Leonela, as she was desired, stopped her lady's blood, of which there was just enough to give credit to her artifice ; and washing the wound with a little wine, bound it up as well as she could, uttering such sorrowful expressions all the time, as would have been sufficient, without any previous lamentation, to persuade Anselmo that his wife was the mirror of chastity. Leonela's complaints were joined by those of her mistress, who taxed herself with cowardice and pusillanimity, in having lost the best opportunity she should ever have of parting with that life which she abhorred. She consulted her maid about disclosing the whole affair to her beloved spouse ; but this scheme Leonela opposed, observing that it would lay her master under an obligation of taking vengeance on Lothario ; a satisfaction he could not enjoy without exposing himself to great danger ; and that a virtuous woman, far from seeking to involve her husband in quarrels, was in duty bound to keep him free of all such disputes, by every method in her power. Camilla seemed to approve of her maid's prudence, and promised to follow her advice ; but said it would be necessary, at all events, to invent some excuse to Anselmo about the wound, which he could not fail of observing. Leonela assuring her, that she could never tell a lye even in jest, the mistress replied, " What shall I do then, child ? for I would not attempt to frame and maintain a falsehood, even though my life depended upon it : since, therefore, we know not how to extricate ourselves otherwise, we must e'en discover the naked truth, rather than run the risk of being detected in a lye."—" Don't give yourself any farther uneasiness, Madam," said Leonela ; " by to-morrow morning I shall have found some expedient ; perhaps the wound being where it is, may be concealed from his view, and Heaven vouchsafe to favour our upright and honourable intention. Compose yourself, dear Madam ; endeavour to calm the perturbation of your spirits, that my master may not perceive your disorder, and leave the consequence to my care, and that of Heaven, which never fails to favour the righteous design."

‘ Anselmo

‘ Anselmo listened with the utmost attention to this tragedy of the death of his honour, which was represented with such exquisite and surprizing address, that the actors seemed really transformed into the very characters they feigned ; he longed impatiently for night, and an opportunity of escaping unseen, that he might fly to his worthy friend Lothario, and receive his congratulation upon the precious jewel he had found in this vindication of his wife’s virtue : they took care to furnish him with the occasion he wanted ; and he, without letting it slip, ran immediately in quest of Lothario. It would be difficult to describe the eagerness of his embraces at meeting, or to recount the expressions he used in the overflowings of his satisfaction, and the extravagant praises he bestowed on Camilla. All these Lothario heard, without being able to manifest the least sign of joy ; his reflections taxed him with the deceit he had practised, and the injury he had done his unsuspecting friend. Anselmo took notice that he did not seem to participate in his pleasure, but believed his concern proceeded from the thoughts of having been the occasion of Camilla’s wound : he therefore, among other things, told him to make himself easy on that score, for the hurt must certainly have been very slight, as they had agreed to conceal it from his knowledge ; and since there was no bad consequence to be apprehended, he hoped for the future to enjoy, in mirth and good-humour, the friendship of his dear Lothario, by whose industry and mediation he now saw himself raised to the most sublime pitch of human felicity ; at the same time he signified, that his desire and design was to pursue no other amusement than that of composing verses in praise of Camilla, that should transmit to the latest posterity the remembrance of her worth.

‘ Lothario commended his laudable determination, and promised to contribute all that lay in his power towards the rearing of such an illustrious edifice ; so that Anselmo being the most agreeably deceived of any man that ever lived, led by the hand
to

to his own house, the very man who, though in his opinion the instrument of his glory, was the total perdition of his fame. Camilla received him with a countenance expressing resentment, but a soul brimful of joy ; and their secret correspondence continued uninterrupted for a few months, at the end of which the wheel of fortune having performed a full circle, the intrigue, which had been hitherto so artfully concealed, was discovered, and Anselmo's Impertinent Curiosity cost him his life.'

CHAPTER VIII.

The Conclusion of the Impertinent Curiosity.

A Little more of this novel remained to be read, when Sancho came running in great confusion, from the garret where his master Don Quixote lay, bawling aloud, 'Come hither, gentlemen ! make haste to the assistance of my master, who is this precious minute engaged and grappled in the toughest battle that ever my eyes beheld ! Egad, he has given that same giant, the enemy to my Lady the princess of Micomicona, such a back stroke, as hath sliced off his head as smooth and clean as the skin of a turnip.'—'What do you mean, brother !' said the curate, closing the book ; 'are you in your right wits, Sancho ? How the devil can your master be fighting with a giant who is two thousand leagues from hence ?

That instant they heard a great noise in the apartment, and Don Quixote proclaiming aloud, 'Stay, villain ! robber ! caitiff ! here I have thee, and thy scymitar shall not avail.' Then he began to strike furiously at the walls ; and Sancho exclaimed, 'Don't stand here listening, but go in and part the fray, or lend your assistance to my master, though I believe that will be needless about this time, for the giant is certainly dead, and giving an account to God of his wicked and mispent life : nay, I saw, with my own eyes, his blood running about the floor, and his head cut off, laying on one side, as large

large as a wine bag.'—' May I be hanged,' cried the innkeeper, at these words, ' If this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not cut open one of the skins filled with red wine, that stood at his bed's head, and the wine that ran out is mistaken by this simple fellow for blood !'

So saying, he rushed into the apartment with the whole company at his heels, and found the knight in a very ludicrous situation ; he appeared in his shirt, which was too scanty before to cover his thighs, and still shorter behind, by six inches at least, and displayed a pair of long lank legs, imbrowned with hair, and not extremely clean ; his head was covered with a little, red, greasy night-cap, belonging to the landlord ; round his left-arm he had wrapped the blanket of his bed, to which Sancho, for good reasons known to himself, bore an inveterate grudge ; and in his right, he wielded his drawn sword, with which he laid about him at a furious rate, talking as if he was actually at blows with the giant ; but, what was very surprizing, his eyes were shut all the time, and he was fast asleep, dreaming of this encounter ; for his imagination was so much engrossed by the adventure he had undertaken to atchieve, as to make him dream that he was already arrived in the kingdom of Micomicon, and engaged in single combat with his gigantic adversary ; instead of whom, he hacked the wine-bags so furiously, that the whole room was afloat with their contents.

The innkeeper no sooner perceived this havock, than incensed to the last degree, he assaulted Don Quixote with his clenched fists, and began to pummel him so severely, that if the curate and Cardenio had not interposed, he would soon have put an end to the adventure of the giant ; yet, for all that, the poor knight did not awake until the barber, fetching a kettle of cold water from the well, foused him all over : even then, though sleep forsook him, he did not recollect the situation he was in ; and Dorothea, seeing him so slight and airily equipped, did not chuse to be a spectator of the combat between her
adversary

adversary and protector. Meanwhile Sancho went about the room, prying into every corner, and searching for the giant's head; which, when he could not find, 'I know,' said he 'that every thing goes by enchantment in this house: the last time I was in this very spot, I received a great many thwacks and thumps without seeing a soul, or being able to guess from whence they came; and now this head is vanished, though I saw it cut off with mine own eyes, and the blood spout out of the body, like water from a fountain.' 'What! dost thou talk of blood and fountains, thou enemy of God and his saints!' cried the inn-keeper; 'don't you see, rascal, that there is no blood or fountain, but the skins that are pierced, and the red wine that swims about the room? I hope the soul of him who pierced them, will swim in hell!' 'I know nothing of the matter,' replied Sancho; 'but that, on account of my not finding the head, I shall see my earldom dissolve like salt in water.'

Thus the squire, though awake, was more extravagant than Don Quixote in his dream; such an impression had his master's promises made upon his imagination. The phlegmatic temper of the squire, together with the mischievous disposition of the knight, well nigh distracted the landlord, who swore, that they should not now, as formerly, go away without paying; and that all the privilege of their errantry should not exempt them from paying both reckonings to the last farthing, for the damage they had done, even to the bits of leather for patching the wine-skins that were cut. The curate, by this time, had got hold of the hands of Don Quixote, who, believing he had now finished the adventure, and was in presence of the Princess Micomicona, fell upon his knees before the priest, saying, 'Renowned princess, your highness may henceforth live secure of what that misbegotten wretch can do; and I, from this day forward, am acquitted of my promise, which is now, by the assistance of Heaven above, and the favour of her for whom I live and breathe, happily and fully performed.'

ed.—‘ Did not I tell you so ?’ cried Sancho, hearing these words. ‘ You see I am not drunk, and may take notice that my master hath put the giant in pickle : the holidays will certainly come round, and the earldom fit me to a hair.’

Who could refrain from laughing at the follies of the master and man ? they occasioned abundance of mirth to every one present, except the landlord, who cursed himself to the devil. At length the barber, curate, and Cardenio, with no small difficulty, put the knight to bed again, where he fell fast asleep in an instant, like one who had been excessively fatigued : they left him to his repose, and went out to console Sancho for his disappointment in losing the giant’s head ; but they found it a harder task to pacify the innkeeper, who was driven almost to despair, by the sudden death of his wine-bags ; besides, the landlady began to cry, in a whimpering tone, ‘ In an unlucky minute and evil hour did this knight-errant enter my doors ! for I am sure, I never beheld him without paying dearly for the fight ! The last time he was here, he refused to pay a whole night’s expence of supper, lodging, straw, and barley, for himself and his squire, his horse and his ass ; saying that he was a knight-errant forsooth : (God send him and all other knights-errant upon errands that will tend to their sorrow !) and therefore, was not obliged to pay for any thing, because it was not ordained in the registers of chivalry ; then, this gentleman coming after him t’other day, borrowed my tail, and though I have got it again, it is a good penny the worse for the wearing, the hair being plucked off in such a manner as makes it unfit for my husband’s purpose ; and to finish and conclude the whole, my bags are broke, and my wine spilt ; (would I could see his heart’s blood in the same condition !) but he must not think to get off so easily, for by the bones of my father, and my mother’s soul ! they shall pay for every thing upon the nail ; or, may I never be called by my own name again, or believed to be my father’s own child !’

These,

Thése, and other expreffions of the fame kind, were uttered, with great bitternefs, by the landlady ; and her faithful fervant Maritornes joined in the exclamation ; while the daughter held her peace, and, from time to time, fmiled at their indignation, which at laft was appeafed by the curate, who promifed to give them fatisfaction, to the beft of his power, for the lofs they had fufained in bags and wine, and, in particular, for the damage done to the tail, which they valued fo highly ; and Dorothea comforted Sancho, by telling him, that as foon as ever it fhould appear that his mafter had actually cut off the giant's head, and fhe fhould find herfelf in quiet poffeffion of her kingdom, fhe would beftow upon him the beft earldom in her gift. The fquire was confoled by this promife, and affured the princefs, that he was certain he had feen the giant's head, by the fame token that he had a huge beard that flowed down to his middle ; and that the whole was now vanifhed, becaufe every thing in that houfe was performed by enchantment, as he had found by woeful experience the laft time he had lodged in that apartment. Dorothea faid fhe was of the fame opinion, defiring he would give himfelf no uneafinefs, for every thing would be for the beft, and fucceed to his heart's content. The quiet of the houfe being thus re-eftablifhed, the curate wanted to read the remaining part of the novel, which he perceived already drew near a clofe ; and Cardenio, Dorothea, and the reft, intreating him to finifh the ftory, he, with a view of pleafing them as well as himfelf, proceeded in thefe words :

' Anfelmo being now fatisfied of his wife's virtue, enjoyed himfelf without the leaft difturbance or care ; while Camilla, in order to difguife her real sentiments, affected always to frown upon Lothario, who, as a farther fancion to this ftratagem, defired Anfelmo to excufe him from coming to his houfe, fince it was plain that Camilla was difgusted at his prefence : but the infatuated Anfelmo would by no means comply with this request ; fo that this unhappy husband was, in a thoufand fhapés, the author of
his

his own dishonour, while, in his own opinion, he was laying up a store of happiness and reputation,

‘ About this time Leonela’s desire of gratifying her own loose wishes, carried her to such a pitch of imprudence, that she gave her wantonness the rein without the least caution; conscious that her mistress would conceal her conduct, and even advise her how to carry on the intrigue without the least danger of being detected. At length, however, Anselmo one night heard somebody walking in her apartment, and endeavouring to get in and see who it was, found the door shut against him. This circumstance increased his desire, he made a violent effort, and the door flew open, upon which he entered, and seeing a man leap out of the window into the street, ran hastily to lay hold or get sight of him; but he was disappointed in both by Leonela, who hanging upon her master, cried, “ Hold, dear Sir! be not surpris’d, nor seek to pursue the person who is fled; he was here on my account, and is as good as my wedded husband.”

‘ Anselmo would give no credit to her words, but, blinded with passion, drew his poignard to stab Leonela, whom he commanded to reveal the truth on pain of immediate death. She, terrified by his threats, answered, without knowing what she said, “ Spare my life, good Sir, and I will disclose things of greater importance than you imagine.—” “ Speak, then,” cried Anselmo, “ or thou shalt instantly die.”—“ At present,” replied Leonela, “ I am in such perturbation, that I cannot possibly make a distinct confession; delay your vengeance till to-morrow morning, and then you shall hear something that will strike you with astonishment: meanwhile be assured, that he who leaped out of the window, is a young man of this city, who has given me a promise of marriage.”

‘ Anselmo being somewhat pacified by this declaration, resolved to grant the respite she demanded; though he never dreamed of hearing any thing to the prejudice of Camilla, of whose virtue he was satisfied and secure; he therefore quitted the room;

in which however he locked up Leonela, telling her she must continue in that place until she should have made this promised discovery ; then going to Camilla, informed her of every thing that had passed, together with the promise her maid had made of discovering things of great importance. It is almost needless to say that Camilla was disturbed at this information : the terror that took possession of her was such, that believing, with good reason too, Leonela would actually disclose to Anselmo every circumstance of her infidelity, she had not resolution enough to wait the issue of her suspicion ; but that very night, while her husband was asleep, collected the best of her jewels, with some money, and getting out of the house, without being perceived, fled to Lothario, and recounted what had happened, at the same time beseeching him to put her in a place of safety, or accompany her to some retreat, where they should be secure from the search of Anselmo.

Such was the confusion of Lothario, at the news of this unexpected event, that he could not answer one syllable, nor for some time resolve upon what was to be done. At length he proposed to carry Camilla to a monastery, the abbess of which was his first cousin ; and his mistress consenting to the proposal, he conducted her thither with all the dispatch which the nature of the case required, and, leaving her to the care of his relation, quitted the city that very night, without imparting the cause of his absence to any living soul.

Next morning, soon as it was day, Anselmo, without perceiving that Camilla was gone, so eagerly did he long to hear this confession of her maid, arose and went directly to the room in which he had confined her ; but he no sooner opened the door, and entered the apartment, than he perceived the sheets of the bed tied together, hanging out of the window ; a manifest proof that Leonela had lowered herself down into the street, by means of that contrivance : he then returned, with a good deal of chagrin, to communicate his disappointment to Camilla, whom when he could not find, he was seized with the
utmost

utmost consternation, especially as none of the servants could give the least account of her departure ; but chancing, in the course of his enquiry, to find the coffers open, and the best part of her jewels carried off, he began to comprehend his disgrace ; and concluded that Leonela was not the cause of his misfortune.

‘ Dispirited with this reflection, he did not stay to dress, but went in a most disconsolate situation, to give an account of his mishap to his friend Lothario ; and when he understood from his servants, that their master had gone out in the night, and carried all his ready money along with him, he had well nigh lost his senses. To crown his misery, he returned to his own house, which was deserted by all his servants, and found himself the most solitary being in nature : he knew not what to think, say, or do, and his judgment began to be impaired ; for upon recollection, he perceived that he was in an instant deprived of his wife, friend, and servants, renounced by Heaven, and, what he felt more deeply than any other part of his disaster, destitute of honour, by the misconduct of Camilla, from which he dated his utter destruction. At length, after a long internal struggle, he resolved to go to the country-house of his friend, where he had been when he furnished the opportunity of planning his own ruin. Accordingly, having locked his door, he mounted his horse, and, almost fainting under the burden of his woes, set out for that place ; but scarce had he travelled one half of the way, when, harrassed by his shocking reflections, he was obliged to alight, and tie his horse to a tree, at the root of which he threw himself down, giving vent to the most lamentable sighs that ever were heaved : there he remained till the twilight ; about which time, perceiving a man coming on horseback from the city, after salutation, he asked what news were stirring at Florence, “ The strangest,” replied the citizen, “ that have been heard these many days ; it is publicly reported, that Lothario, the intimate friend of Anselmo the rich, who lived at St. John’s, hath this last night carried off the wife of his friend, who

is also missing. This discovery was made to the governor by Camilla's maid, who was detected in letting herself down by a sheet, from one of the windows of Anselmo's house. In short, I do not know the particulars exactly; but the whole city is astonished at this event, which they could never have expected from the intimacy of the two gentlemen, who were so strictly united in the bands of amity, as to acquire the title of the Two Friends." "Do you know what road Lothario and Camilla have taken?" said Anselmo. "That is not yet discovered," replied the traveller; "though the governor hath used great diligence in the enquiry." Anselmo wished him a good evening; and the citizen having returned the compliment, proceeded on his journey.

'This unhappy news reduced this ill-fated husband to the verge of death as well as distraction. He mounted, however, as well as he could, and arrived at the house of his friend, who had not as yet heard of his misfortune; but seeing him so exhausted, ghastly, and pale, imagined he had met with some grievous disaster. Anselmo begged to be put to bed immediately, and furnished with pen, ink, and paper: thus provided, he was left alone, and the chamber locked at his own desire; then the remembrance of his misfortune began to be so heavy upon his soul, that he plainly perceived his end approaching, and being desirous of declaring the cause of his strange and sudden death, he took up the pen; but, before he could execute his design, his breath failed him, and he expired, a victim to that sorrow which was occasioned by his own impertinent curiosity. His friend finding it grow late, and that Anselmo had not called, went into his chamber, to enquire about his health; there he found him lying upon his face, one half of his body in bed, and the other on the table, with a pen in his hand, and a written paper lying open before him.

'The gentleman having spoke to him without receiving any answer, took him by the hand, and feeling him cold and stiff, concluded he was dead. Surprized and concerned to the last degree, he called

up

up his family to be witnesses of this melancholy event and knowing the paper to be Anselmo's own handwriting, read the contents, in these words: "I am deprived of life by my own impertinent curiosity. If the news of my death reach Camilla's ears, let her know that I forgive her infidelity; for she was not bound to perform miracles, nor I under any necessity of expecting them at her hands: since, therefore, I have been the contriver of my own dishonour, there is no reason that——" So far he had written, but life had forsaken him before he could finish the sentence. Next day his friend sent an account of his death to his parents, who were already informed of his mischance, as also of the convent to which Camilla had retreated; and where she now lay at the point of accompanying her spouse in his last indispensable journey; not so much on account of Anselmo's death, as in consequence of the information she received concerning her absent lover: it was said, that though she was now a widow, she would neither quit the convent nor take the veil; but in a little time the news arrived of Lothario's being killed in a battle which was fought between the renowned Captain Goncalo Fernandes de Cordova, and Monsieur De Lautrec, in the kingdom of Naples, whither this too-late repenting friend had made his retreat. This event was no sooner known, than Camilla professed herself a nun, and in a few days yielded up her life a prey to grief and melancholy. Such was the untimely end to which they were all brought from a beginning of whim and indiscretion.

'This novel,' said the curate, 'is not amiss; but I cannot think the story is true; and if it be feigned, the author has erred in point of invention; for it cannot be supposed that any husband would be so mad as to try this dangerous experiment of Anselmo: had it been related of a gallant and his mistress, it might have passed; but with regard to a husband and his wife, it is altogether improbable; however, the manner of narrating it is not disagreeable.

CHAPTER IX

An Account of other strange Adventures that happened at the Inn.

AT that instant the landlord, standing at the inn-door, exclaimed, 'There is a noble company; odd! if they halt here we shall sing for joy.' 'What company?' said Cardenio. 'Four men,' replied the inn-keeper, 'who ride with short stirrups each of them equipped with lance, target, and mask, with a lady on a side-saddle, dressed in white and veiled, and two attendants on foot.' When the priest asked if they were near, he answered, 'So near, that they are already at the gate.'

Dorothea hearing this information put on her veil, and Cardenio withdrew into Don Quixote's apartment. Immediately the whole company announced by the landlord entered the inn-yard; and the four horsemen, who were persons of genteel mien and carriage, instantly alighting, went to help the lady from her horse, when one of them taking her in his arms, placed her in a chair that stood by the door of the room in which Cardenio had concealed himself. All this time neither she nor they took off their masks, nor uttered one syllable; but when she was seated, she heaved a profound sigh, and let her arms fall down on each side, like a person fainting with weakness. While the footman led the horses into the stable, the curate, being curious to know who those persons were, so remarkable in their silence and dress, went up, and put the question to one of the lacquies, who answered, 'Truly, Signior, we are as ignorant in that particular as you are; though they seem to be people of condition, especially he who took the lady in his arms, because all the rest behave to him with great respect, following his directions in every thing, with the utmost punctuality.' 'And, pray, who may the lady be?' said the priest. 'We know as little of her as of the men,' replied the lacquey; 'for during the journey I have never once beheld her face; I have often heard her sigh bitterly, and utter piercing groans, in every one of which she

she seemed to yield her very soul ; but it is not to be wondered at that we should know so little of their affairs, my companion and I having attended them two days only ; for, meeting us on the road, they intreated and persuaded us to accompany them as far as Andalusia, promising to pay us handsomely for our trouble.' 'Have you never heard one of them named?' resumed the curate. 'Never once,' answered the young man ; 'they travel with surprising silence ; nothing is heard but the sobs and sighs of the poor lady, which move us to compassion ; we firmly believe that she is forced upon this journey, and gather from her dress that she is a nun ; or, which is more probable, going to take the veil ; and finding herself very little inclined to that way of life, is melancholy at the prospect.'

The curate said, nothing was more probable ; and leaving the lacquey, returned to Dorothea, who by this time, out of natural sympathy with the affliction of the masked lady, had approached and accosted her in these words : 'What is the matter with you, dear Madam ? If you labour under any indisposition which the practice and experience of women can relieve, my assistance is heartily at your service.' To this kind offer no reply was made by the sorrowful lady, who, notwithstanding the other's repeated intreaties, would not open her mouth ; until the person who, by the lacquey's information, was chief of the company, addressing himself to Dorothea, said, 'Do not fatigue yourself, Madam, in making profers of service to that woman, who cannot be grateful for any favour she receives ; nor importune her for any reply, unless you desire to hear some falsehoods proceed from her lips.' 'My lips,' said the hitherto silent lady ; 'were never profaned with falsehood ; on the contrary, my present misfortune is owing to my sincerity and my abhorrence of lyes. Of this assertion you yourself are too sensible ; since your own perfidy and falsehood are the effects of my constancy and truth.'

These

These words were distinctly overheard by Cardenio, who was only separated from them by the door of Don Quixote's chamber; and they no sooner reached his ears, than he cried aloud, "Good Heaven, what do I hear! What voice is that which struck my sense!" The lady being exceedingly surprised at that exclamation, turned about her head, and not seeing the person that pronounced it, started up, and ran towards the apartment from whence it seemed to come; but was prevented by her conductor, who would not suffer her to move one step farther. In the disorder occasioned by her struggle, her mask dropped off, and discovered a countenance of incomparable and amazing beauty, even though disguised with paleness and horror; for her eyes rolled about to every corner which her sight could reach, with such eagerness and wildness, that she looked like a woman possessed.

Dorothea, and all present, were infinitely concerned at these symptoms, the meaning of which they could not understand; meanwhile, the cavalier was so busied in holding her fast by the shoulders, that he could not attend to his mask, which also fell to the ground: and Dorothea lifting up her eyes towards him, as he held the lady in his arms, perceived that this cavalier was no other than her own husband, Don Fernando. No sooner did she recognize his features, than fetching a long and melancholy sigh from the very bottom of her soul, she fell backward in a swoon, and if the barber had not been at hand to support her, would have certainly come to the ground: the curate ran instantly to take off her veil, that he might sprinkle water on her face, which was immediately known by Don Fernando, who held the other lady in his arms, and was thunderstruck at the sight: he would not, however, quit Lucinda, who struggled to get loose; she and Cardenio having by this time recognized each other by their mutual exclamations. He had also overheard the groan uttered by Dorothea when she fainted, and believing that it proceeded from Lucinda, rushed out of his apartment in a fright,
when

when the first object he beheld was Don Fernando clasping her in his arms. This nobleman knew him immediately, and all three, (namely, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea,) were struck dumb with astonishment, and seemed insensible of what had happened, gazing in silence at one another.

Dorothea directed her eager view to Don Fernando, who stared at Cardenio, whose eyes were fixed upon Lucinda, who looked wishfully at him; but the first that broke silence, was this last, who addressed herself in these words to Don Fernando: ‘Suffer me, Signior, in regard to your own character, since you are deaf to every other consideration, to cleave to that wall of which I am the ivy, to avail myself of that prop from which you could not disengage me, with all your importunities, promises, and threats. Behold how Heaven, by unusual and mysterious means, hath brought me to my true and lawful husband; and since you know, by dear-bought experience, that nothing but death can expel his image from my breast, let this plain demonstration, since all other attempts are vain, convert your love into rage, your friendship into hate, and instantly deprive me of life, which I shall yield with pleasure in the presence of my legal lord, who will then perhaps be convinced of the fidelity I preserved to the last moment of my existence.’

In the mean time, Dorothea being recovered from her swoon, had listened to Lucinda’s declaration, by which she discovered her situation and name; but perceiving that Don Fernando neither quitted his hold, nor answered one word to her sollicitation, she exerted her whole strength in falling down on her knees before him, and having shed a large quantity of tears from her beautiful eyes, accosted him in these words: “My dear lord! if your eyes were not dazzled and obscured by the rays of that sun which you hold eclipsed within your arms, you would perceive that she who thus kneels before you, is the unhappy (so long as you are pleased she should be so) and forlorn Dorothea—I am that humble country-maiden whom your generosity or
passion

passion vouchsafed to raise to the honour of calling you her own. I am she who, confined within the bounds of modesty, lived a contented life, until moved by your importunities, and seemingly upright addressees, she opened the gates of her reserve, and surrendered to you the keys of her freedom. An offering but ill requited, as plainly appears by that hard fate, in consequence of which I am found in this place, and also find you in your present situation. Nevertheless, I would not have you imagine that I came hither, induced by any dishonourable motives; but that the sorrow conceived at seeing myself forsaken and forgotten by you, was the sole cause of my retreat. You desired I should be your own; and that desire you accomplished so effectually, that although your inclinations may be changed, it is impossible you should cease to be mine. Consider, my lord, that my unparalleled affection may counterbalance the beauty and birth of her for whom I am abandoned: you cannot be the fair Lucinda's husband, because you are already mine; nor she become your wife, while she appertains to Cardenio; and it will be a much easier task, if you reflect upon it impartially, to recal your love for her who adores you, than to gain the affection of one by whom you are abhorred. You solicited my unsuspecting heart, you importuned my integrity, you was not ignorant of my lowly station, and know in what manner I yielded to your will; so that you have no subterfuge, nor the least room to say you was deceived. If this be the case, as doubtless it is, and you be a Christian as well as a gentleman, why do you, by such evasions, delay to make the end as happy as the beginning of my fortune? If you will not receive me as what I really am, your lawful wife, at least admit me into the number of your slaves; for, in whatever shape I belong to you, I shall account myself fortunate and blessed: do not, therefore, by renouncing me entirely, give scandal an opportunity of impeaching my honour. Make not my parents miserable in their old age; their faithful services to your father merit a more kind return! If
you

you think your blood will be debased in mixing with mine, consider, that almost all the great families on earth have undergone the same intercourse, and that the woman's quality in no manner affects illustrious descent: besides, true nobility consists in virtue, and in that shall I have the advantage over you, if you deny and oppose the justice of my claim. In fine, the last argument I shall use is this, whether you are pleased or displeased with your destiny, I am your lawful wife: witness your own words, which neither are nor ought to be false; if you value yourself on that for which you undervalue me; witness your hand-writing, and Heaven above, to the testimony of which you appealed for the performance of your promise; and if all these should fail, your conscience will never cease whispering to you, amidst your pleasures, in vindication of this truth, which will disturb your most exalted enjoyments.'

This supplication, enforced with other arguments, was pronounced so feelingly by the afflicted and weeping Dorothea, that tears of sympathy were shed by all present, the companions of Don Fernando not excepted; he himself listened without answering one word, until she had made an end of her address, and began to utter such woeful sighs and groans, as were almost sufficient to melt an heart of brass. Lucinda stood gazing upon her with equal compassion for her sorrow, and admiration of her beauty and good sense; nay, she would have gone and offered her all the consolation in her power, had she not still been kept fast locked in the arms of Don Fernando; who, full of confusion and surprise, after having for a good while fixed his eyes upon Dorothea, with great attention, opened his arms, and leaving Lucinda at liberty, said, 'You have conquered, beautiful Dorothea: the victory is yours; for so many truths conjoined are surely irresistible.'

Lucinda was so faint and weak, that when Don Fernando quitted her, she would have fallen to the ground, had it not been for Cardenio, who had placed himself behind her ravisher, that he might not
be

be known* ; but now, laying aside all fear, and resolving to adventure every thing, he sprung to the assistance of Lucinda, and catching her in his arms, ' If,' said he, ' it be the will and pleasure of pitying Heaven, that you should find repose, my faithful, constant, and charming Lucinda ! I think you can enjoy it no where so securely, as in these arms, which now receive, and formerly encircled you, when fortune was pleased that I should call you mine.'

At these words, she gazed upon him with great eagerness ; she had before began to recognize his voice, and now, recollecting his features, like a person deprived of judgment, who disregards all decency and form, she threw her arms about his neck, and joining her lips to his, ' Yes, my dear Cardenio,' said she, ' you are the real lord of this your slave, in spite of adverse fate, and all those threats, though greater than they are, that persecute my life, which now depends on yours alone.'

An unexpected fight was this to Don Fernando, and all the bye-standers, who were not a little surprised at what they saw. While Dorothea, observing her husband change colour, and signify an inclination of being revenged upon Cardenio, by laying his hand upon his sword, ran, with incredible agility, and clasping his knees, which she kissed, held him so firmly embraced that he could not move, saying, while the tears trickled from her eyes, ' What means my only refuge to do on this unexpected occasion ? Your own wife is now kneeling before you, and she whom you desire to wed is in the arms of her lawful husband ; consider whether it be just or possible for you to undo that which Heaven hath done ; why should you seek to unite yourself with one, who, disdain all opposition and inconvenience, and confirmed in her own constancy and truth, even before your eyes, lets fall from her's a shower of tenderness into the bosom of her

* But it appears in the preceding page, that he was already known both to Fernando and Lucinda. *Aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus.*

her lawful spouse? For the sake of God and of yourself, I entreat and beseech you, that this remarkable recognition may not only fail to increase your indignation, but even diminish it in such a manner that these two lovers may, without any impediment from you, enjoy each other as long as Heaven will permit them to live. In this self-denial you will manifest the generosity of your noble and illustrious soul; and convince the world, that you are governed more by reason than by appetite.

While Dorothea pronounced these words, Cardenio, though he held Lucinda in his arms, kept his eyes still fixed upon Don Fernando, with full resolution, if he attempted any thing to his prejudice, to defend himself as well as he could, against his adversary and all his adherents, although it should cost him his life. But this young nobleman's friends, together with the curate and barber, not forgetting honest Sancho Panza, who were present at the whole affair, interposed, and making a circle about him, begged earnestly that he would be pleased to consider the tears of Dorothea, and if what she alledged was true, as they firmly believed it was, no longer suffer her to be defrauded of her just and reasonable hope. They desired him to observe, that in all appearance it was not by accident, but the immediate direction of Providence, that they had all met together so unexpectedly in this place; and the curate intreated him to reflect, that death alone could divide Lucinda from Cardenio; that though they might be parted by the edge of the sword, they would look upon death as the greatest blessing that could befall them; and that, in a case of this kind, which admitted of no other remedy, it would be his wisest course, to constrain and conquer his own passion, and demonstrate the generosity of his heart, by permitting of his own free will, these two lovers to enjoy that state of happiness which Heaven had ordained for their lot; that he should contemplate Dorothea's beauty, which, far from being excelled was equalled in few or none; and to her beauty, add the consideration of her humility and excess-

five love; above all, take notice, that if he valued himself upon being a gentleman and a Christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given, and in so doing, act in conformity to the will of God, and satisfy the discreet part of mankind, who are very sensible that it is the prerogative of beauty, even in a low estate, when accompanied with virtue, to be lifted up to the highest rank, without any disparagement to the person who thus raises it to an equality with himself; and since the irresistible force of inclination must prevail, provided there be nothing criminal in the means, he is not to be blamed who acts according to its dictates.

To these arguments were added so many of the same sort, that the valiant heart of Don Fernando, nourished by illustrious blood, relented, and he was overcome by the force of that truth, which, however inclined, he could not deny. The signal of his surrender, and yielding to this reasonable and just proposal, was his stooping down and embracing Dorothea; to whom he said, 'Rise, Madam, it is not just that she who reigns in my soul, should lie prostrate at my feet. If hitherto I have given small proof of what I now profess, perhaps my omission hath been owing to the appointment of Heaven, that by giving you an opportunity of manifesting the sincerity of your love, I might know how to esteem you according to your deserts. I beg therefore, you will not upbraid me with my misconduct, and unkind neglect; since the same force and occasion that attached me to you, was the cause of my endeavour to disengage myself. That you may be convinced of the truth, behold and contemplate the eyes of the now contented Lucinda, in which you will find an excuse for all my errors; and, since she hath found and attained her hearts desire, and my utmost wish is fulfilled in thus retrieving you, may she live in peace and quiet, for many happy years, with her Cardenio, and may Heaven grant the same felicity to me with Dorothea!'

So saying, he embraced her again, pressing his lips to her's with such tenderness, that it required his
greatest

greatest efforts to forbear giving, with his tears, indubitable signs of his affection and remorse. But those endeavours did not succeed with Lucinda, Cardenio, and every other person present, who began to weep so plentifully, either at their own happiness, or the satisfaction of their friends, that one would have thought some grievous misfortune had happened to the whole company. Even Sancho blubbered; though he afterwards owned, that his sorrow proceeded from seeing that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the Queen of Micomicon, from whom he expected such favours.

This universal admiration and thaw having lasted some time, Cardenio and Lucinda fell upon their knees before Don Fernando, whom they thanked for his generosity in such polite terms, that he scarce knew what answer to make, but raised and embraced them both with demonstrations of uncommon courtesy and affection. Then asking Dorothea how she had come to that place, so distant from her own home, she, with great elegance and brevity, repeated what she had before recounted to Cardenio; and her husband and his company were so pleased with her narration, that they wished it could have been spun out to a much greater length; so gracefully did she relate her own misfortunes.

Her task being finished, Don Fernando informed them of what had happened to him in the city, after he found, in Lucinda's bosom, the paper, in which she declared herself Cardenio's wife. Seeing that she could not possibly be his, he said, he was determined to put her to death, and would actually have executed his purpose, had not her parents interposed. He then quitted the house, full of shame and resentment, resolving to revenge himself the first opportunity; and next day understood that she was gone off, without any body's knowing whither she had directed her flight. At length, however, in a few months, he got notice that she was in a certain monastery, where she intended to spend her whole life, if she could not enjoy it in the company of Cardenio. He no sooner received this intimation,

than chusing these three gentlemen for his companions, he went straight to the place of her residence ; but without speaking to her, or making himself known, lest the monastery should be more strictly guarded on his account. He waited, therefore, until one day he found the porter's lodge open when leaving two of his friends to secure the door, he entered the monastery with the other in quest of Lucinda, whom he found in the cloisters, talking with a nun ; and snatching her off, without giving her a moment's time for recollection, carried her instantly to a place where they provided themselves with necessaries for their journey. This exploit they were enabled to perform with safety, because the monastery stood in the middle of a field, at a good distance from any village or town. He said, Lucinda no sooner perceived herself in his power, than she fainted away, and when she recovered the use of her senses, did nothing but weep and sigh, without speaking one word ; so that, accompanied with silence and tears, they arrived at the inn, which he looked upon as the heavenly goal where all earthly misfortunes were happily terminated.

CHAPTER X.

A Continuation of the History of the renowned Princess Micomicona, with other pleasant Adventures.

SANCHO heard every thing that passed with no small anxiety of mind, seeing the hopes of his preferment vanish into smoke, the beautiful Princess Micomicona transformed into Dorothea, the giant into Don Fernando, and his master in a sound sleep, little dreaming of what had happened. Dorothea could not persuade herself, that all her good fortune was not a dream ; Cardenio entertained the same opinion, which was also embraced by Lucinda ; while Don Fernando gave thanks to Heaven for its favour, in extricating him from that labyrinth of perplexity, in which he was at the point of losing his reputation and soul. In fine, every person present was well satisfied, and rejoiced at the happy issue

sue of such intricate and desperate affairs. The curate represented every thing in the right point of view, with great discretion, and congratulated the parties concerned on the felicity they had acquired; but she whose joy was most vociferous was the landlady, who loudly exulted in the promise of Cardenio and the curate, who had undertaken to pay her with interest, for the damage she had sustained on Don Quixote's account. Sancho alone, as we have already observed, was afflicted, unfortunate, and sad, and going to his master, who was just awake, said, with a lamentable tone, 'Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, your worship may now sleep as long as you please, without giving yourself the trouble of slaying the giant, or restoring the princess to her throne; that whole affair is already brought to a conclusion.'

'I really believe what you say,' answered the knight, 'for I have been engaged with the giant, in the most obstinate and outrageous combat that I believe I shall ever fight in all the days of my life; with one back-stroke, slam went his head to the ground, and discharged such a quantity of blood, that it ran like rills of water along the field.' 'Or rather like red wine your worship should say,' replied the squire; 'for I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the dead giant is no other than a wine-bag, and the blood, eighteen gallons of good red wine, which was contained in its belly: the head you cut off is the whore my mother, and the whole affair is gone to the devil.' 'What does the lunatic mean?' said Don Quixote, 'are you in your right senses, Sancho?' 'Rise, Sir,' resumed the squire, 'and see what a fine piece of work you have made, and what a score you have run. You shall behold the queen converted into a private lady, called Dorothea, with many other strange events, at which, if you take them right, you will be hugely astonished.' 'I shall not wonder at any thing of that kind,' replied his master; 'for thou may'st remember, the last time we were in this house, I told thee that

every incident which happened was conducted and brought about by enchantment, so that we need not be surpris'd if the same power should prevail at present.' 'I should be of your worship's opinion, answered Sancho,' 'if my blanketting had been of the same stamp; but that was not the case, or it was really and truly a substantial tossing. This very innkeeper whom we saw to-day, held a corner of the blanket, and canted me into the air with great strength and nimbleness, passing a thousand waggish jokes, and laughing at me all the while; from whence I concluded, simple and sinner as I am, that as I knew their persons, there was no enchantment in the case, but abundance of bruising and bad fortune.' 'Well, Heaven will make thee amends,' said the knight; 'meanwhile, reach me my cloaths; for I want to go forth and examine those events and transformations which thou hast mentioned.'

While Sancho was helping him to dress, the curate gave Don Fernando and his company an account of Don Quixote's madness, and the artifice they had used to disengage him from the poor rock to which he imagined himself exiled by the disdain of his mistress. He also recounted all those adventures that Sancho had imparted to him, at which they were not a little surpris'd, and laugh'd immoderately, agreeing in opinion with every body who knew the knight, that it was the strangest extravagance that ever enter'd a disturb'd imagination. The priest moreover observ'd, that since the good fortune of Dorothea obstructed the progress of their design, there was a necessity for inventing another plan that should bring him home to his own house. Cardenio propos'd that they should prosecute the scheme they had already began; and Lucinda would act and represent the part of Dorothea. 'No,' said Don Fernando, 'that must not be: Dorothea shall still proceed with her own invention; for, as it cannot be far from hence to the habitation of that honest gentleman, I shall be glad to contribute towards his cure.' And when he understood that they would arrive in two days at his house; 'Were it farther

farther off,' said he, 'I should go with pleasure to assist in such a laudable design.'

At that instant Don Quixote came forth, armed at all points, with Mambrino's helmet, battered as it was, upon his head, his shield braced upon his arm, and his pole or lance in his hand. Don Fernando and his companions were amazed at this strange apparition, when they beheld such a rueful length of face, so withered and tawny, together with his ill-sorted armour, and the solemnity of his gait. They gazed upon him in silent expectation of what he would say, while he, with infinite gravity of aspect, fixing his eyes upon Dorothea, accosted her in these words: 'Fair lady, I am informed by this my squire, that your greatness is annihilated, and your quality undone, by being changed from your former rank of queen and sovereign princess, into the condition of a private damsel. If this hath been done by the necromancy of the king your father, who is perhaps afraid that I should not be able to give you the assistance required, I say he neither knows, nor ever did know, the half of that art which he professeth, and that he is but little conversant in the history of chivalry; for had he read and perused it with such leisure and attention as I have bestowed upon that subject, he would have found, that on every occasion, knights of much less reputation than I possess have achieved much more difficult enterprizes than this, it being a matter of small moment to kill a pitiful giant, let him be as arrogant as he will; for not many hours ago, I saw myself engaged with one—but I chuse to be silent rather than have my veracity called in question, though time, that unmasker all things, will shew when we least expect it.'

'That you was engaged with wine bags, and not with a giant!' cried the inkeeper; who was silenced by Don Fernando, and forbid to interrupt the knight's discourse in any shape whatever. So that Don Quixote proceeded, saying, 'In fine, if the father of your disinherited highness hath performed this metamorphosis on your person, for the causes I have mentioned, I hope you will give no credit to such

such considerations; for there is no danger upon earth through which my sword will not open a way, and by laying the head of your adversary in the dust in a few days, invest yours with that crown to which you have an undoubted right.'

Here Don Quixote left off speaking, in expectation of a reply from the princess, who knowing it was Don Fernando's pleasure that he should continue the deceit, until the knight could be brought back to his own house, answered with equal gravity and grace, 'Whosoever hath told you, most valiant Knight of the Rueful Countenance, that I am changed and transformed from what I was, has not adhered to the truth in his information: indeed I am somewhat changed by certain fortunate events which have happened even beyond my own expectation; but, nevertheless, I have not ceased to be what I was, nor altered that resolution which I have always maintained, of taking the advantage of your valiant and invincible arm. Wherefore, dear Sir, be so good as to do justice to the honour of the father who begat me, and look upon him as a man of sagacity and foresight; since, by the science he professed, he found such an easy and effectual path to the cure of my misfortune; for I firmly believe, that were it not for you, I should not now be so happy as I am, as the greatest part of these gentlemen can truly witness. Nothing then remains, but that we set out tomorrow, because we could not propose to travel far to-day; and as for the success on which my hopes are built, I leave it entirely to God, and the worth of your heroick breast.'

Don Quixote hearing these words, turned to Sancho, in the most violent indignation, saying, 'I protest, sirrah! you are the most malicious little slanderer in Spain. Say, you rascal, you vagabond! did not you tell me just now, that the princess was transformed into a private gentlewoman called Dorothea; and that the head, which I know I cut from the giant's shoulders, was the whore your mother; with many more foolish particulars, which threw me into the greatest confusion that ever I felt since I was born

phr
fryin
und
are

born? 'By Heaven!' (here he turned up his eyes and bit his lips) 'I have a strong inclination to commit such slaughter upon thee, as will be an instructive warning* to all the lying squires who shall henceforth attend knights-errant in the course of their adventures.'

'Pray be pacified, good your worship!' cried Sancho: 'I may possibly be deceived in what concerns the change of my Lady Princess Micomicona; but as to the giant's head being a wine-bag, and the blood no other than good red wine, I am not mistaken, as I shall answer to God; for the skins that were flashed are still to be seen by your worship's bed side, and the whole room is flooded with the wine. But the proof of the pudding is in the eating of it†; you will be convinced when Mr. What-d'ye call him, our landlord here, makes out a bill of the damage he has suffered. As to the rest, I am rejoiced from my soul, to find that the queen's majesty is the same as usual, because it concerns me, as well as any other neighbour's child.' I tell thee, Sancho,' replied Don Quixote 'that thou art distracted: forgive me, that is enough.' 'Enough in all conscience,' said Don Fernando; 'there is nothing more to be said on this subject. I think the princess judges very prudently in deferring her journey till to-morrow, because the day is already far advanced; let us therefore spend this night in agreeable conversation, and at the approach of day, we will in a body attend the gallant Don Quixote, that we may be witnesses of the unheard of exploits which he will doubtless perform in the course of this vast enterprise he hath undertaken.' 'It is my duty and resolution to serve and attend you,' answered the knight; 'and I have the most grateful sense of your favour and good opinion, which I shall endeavour to

* In the original, 'As will put salt in the skull.'

† Literally, 'You shall see when eggs are fried.' A phrase alluding to the story of a thief, who having stole a frying pan, and being asked by the owner what he carried under his cloak, replied, "You will see when the eggs are fried." Metaphorically, 'Time will discover.'

to justify, though it should cost me my life, or even more—if more I can pay.’

Many compliments and proffers of service passed between Don Fernando and Don Quixote; but they were interrupted by the arrival of a traveller, who by his garb seemed to be a Christian slave lately escaped from Barbary; for he was clad in a coat of blue cloth, wanting a collar, with short skirts and half-sleeves; his breeches and cap were of the same stuff; and he wore date coloured buskins, with a Moorish scymitar slung in a shoulder-belt across his breast. He was followed by a woman dressed in the Moorish habit, mounted upon an ass; with a veil over her face, a brocaded bonnet on her head, and a mantle that flowed from her shoulders to her heels. The man was robust and well-proportioned, seemingly turned of forty, with a brownish complexion, large whiskers, and a well-furnished beard; in short, his mien was so genteel, that if he had been properly dressed, they would have taken him for a man of birth and quality.

Soon as he entered the gate, he called for a private apartment, and seemed very much concerned when he understood that all the rooms of the inn were engaged; however, he went to the lady in the Moorish dress, and lifted her off in his arms. Upon which Lucinda, Dorothea, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, flocked around her; their curiosity being excited by the novelty of the garb, which none of them had ever seen before; and Dorothea, who was always good-humoured, mannerly, and discreet, concluded that she and her conductor were chagrined at their want of a chamber, spoke to her thus: ‘Be not uneasy, Madam, at your want of accommodation here; it is the inconvenience of almost all inns; but if you will be pleased to partake with us, pointing to Lucinda) perhaps you will find that in the course of your journey you have been fain to put up with harder fare.’ The veiled lady made no answer; but only rising from her seat, signified her thanks by crossing her hands upon her bosom, bending her body and bowing her head; so that
from

from her silence they concluded that she must be a native Moor, and that she could not speak any Christian language.

Her attendant, who had hitherto been employed in something else, perceiving that the company had made a circle about his companion, who could make no replies to their interrogations, said to them, 'Ladies, this young woman understands little or no Spanish, and speaks no language but that of her own country; so that she is incapable of answering any questions you may have asked.' 'We have asked no questions,' said Lucinda, 'but only made her an offer of our company for this night, with a share of our lodging, and what accommodation is to be had; and this we tender with that hearty good-will which obliges us to serve all strangers, especially those of our own sex, who stand in need of our assistance.'

'Dear Madam,' replied the conductor, 'in her name and in my own, I return you a thousand thanks, and highly esteem your proffered favour, which on this occasion, and from such persons as your appearance proclaims you to be, must certainly be very kind and condescending.' 'Signior,' said Dorothea, 'is this lady Christian or Moor? By her silence and her dress, we are induced to believe she is not what we would wish her to be.' 'In her body and dress,' replied the stranger, 'she is a Moor, but altogether a Christian in her soul; for she longs ardently to be a professed convert to our faith.' 'Then she is not baptized?' resumed Lucinda. 'She has had no opportunity,' said the captive, 'since she quitted Algiers, which is her native country: and hitherto hath never been in such imminent danger of her life, as to make it necessary before she is instructed in all the ceremonies enjoined by our holy mother church; but, if it please Heaven, she shall be baptized very soon, with decency suitable to the quality of her person, which is greater than either her dress or mine seems to declare.'

This intimation raised the curiosity of all the spectators, to know who this Moor and captive were

were; but nobody chose to ask the question at that time, which seemed more proper for reposing themselves than relating the history of their lives. Dorothea taking her by the hand, seated the stranger close by her side, and entreated her to take off the veil; she looked at her conductor, as if she wanted to know what the lady desired, and he told her in Arabic, that they intreated her to be uncovered; at the same time advising her to comply with their request. She accordingly unveiled herself, and discovered a face so amiable, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, who, in her turn, gave her the preference to Dorothea; and all present concluded, that if any creature upon earth could vie with them in beauty, it was this Moorish lady, who, in the opinion of some of the company, excelled them both in certain particulars. As beauty, therefore, has the privilege and energy to conciliate minds and attract affections, every body present was seized with an inclination to serve and cherish the charming Moor. Don Fernando asked her name of the captive, who answered, 'Lela Zorayda.' This she no sooner heard, than understanding the question which had been put to the Christian, she pronounced with great eagerness and sweetness of concern, 'No, no Zorayda; Maria, Maria!' signifying that her name was Maria, and not Zorayda: these words, with the affecting manner in which they were expressed, brought tears from the eyes of some of the hearers, especially the women, who were naturally tender and compassionate. Lucinda embraced her affectionately, saying, 'Yes, yes, Maria, Maria.' And to this the Moor replied, 'Yes, yes, Maria; Zorayda, *macange*; which, in the Arabick, signifies 'No.'

Meanwhile it grew late; and the inn-keeper, by order of Don Fernando's attendants, prepared, with great diligence and care, as good a repast as he could possibly provide; so that, when supper-time arrived, they sat down all together at a long hall table, for there was neither a round nor square one in the house. They forced the head and principal seat, in spite

spite of all his excuses, on Don Quixote, who desired that the Princess Micomicona might sit by the side of her protector; next to her, Lucinda and Zorayda placed themselves, being fronted by Fernando and Cardenio, at whose left hand sat the captive and the other gentlemen, while the curate and the barber took their station close to the ladies. In this manner they supped with vast satisfaction, which was still increased, when Don Quixote, leaving off eating, and inspired by the same spirit that moved him to harangue among the goatherds, began the following dissertation: 'Verily, gentlemen, if it be duly considered, great and unexpected events are seen by those who profess the order of knight-errantry. What inhabitant of this earth, if he should now enter the gates of this castle, and behold us seated in this manner, could conceive or credit that we are what we are? Who could imagine, that this lady on my right-hand is the great queen whom we all know her to be, and that I am the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, so celebrated by the voice of fame? Now there is no manner of doubt, that this exercise and art exceeds all others hitherto invented by man, and that it ought to be more esteemed, because it is more exposed to danger. Away with those who give letters the preference over arms! I affirm, that such people, whosoever they are, know not what they say; for the sole reason to which they adhere, in this decision, is, that the labour of the body is exceeded by that of the mind; and that the profession of arms is altogether as corporeal as the exercise and office of a common day-labourer, that requires nothing more than bodily strength; as if that which is called soldiership by us who profess it, did not include acts of valour which none but persons of uncommon genius could execute; or, as if the toil of a warrior, who has the charge of an army, or commands in a town that is besieged, doth not affect the mind as well as the body. Is it to be supposed, that by mere corporeal strength he can penetrate and discover the intention of the enemy? To anticipate designs, baffle stratagems, surmount difficulties,

culties, and prevent the mischief that is to be dreaded, are all efforts of the understanding, in which the body hath no share; if the profession of arms, therefore, requires genius, as well as that of letters, let us see which of the two requires most mental toil: and this question may be determined, by considering the end and aim of each; for that occupation deserves the highest esteem, which hath the noblest purpose in view, the end and scope of letters. I speak not here, of that divine learning, whose aim is to raise and conduct the soul to Heaven; to an end so infinite, no intention whatever can be compared. I speak of human learning, the ultimate end of which is to regulate distributive justice, render to every one his due, and to understand and to protect the equitable laws; an aim certainly generous and highly commendable! yet not so deserving of the most sublime praise as the profession of arms, the object and the end of which is peace, the greatest good that mortals can enjoy; for, the first blessed news which this world and mankind heard, were these pronounced by the angels, on that night, which was our day, when they sung in the air, "Glory be to God on high; and on earth, peace and good will towards men;" and the salutation, which the best Master, either in heaven or upon earth, taught his adherents and favourites; which was to say, when they entered any house, "Peace be to this house!" Nay, he himself, at different times, said, "My peace I give unto you! My peace I leave with you! Peace be among you!" A jewel and legacy well worthy of him who left it! a jewel, without which there can be no felicity, either on earth or in heaven! This peace is the genuine aim of war; for arms and war are the same; and this being taken for granted, the end of war is nobler than that of learning; wherefore, let us next consider the bodily toil sustained by each, that we may see on which side the balance lies in that particular.

In this sensible manner did Don Quixote continue his discourse, from which nobody that heard him could distinguish that he was mad; on the contrary,
his

his audience consisting chiefly of gentlemen, to which title the profession of arms is annexed, they they listened with great pleasure, while he proceeded thus.

‘The hardships of a student, I say, are these; first of all, poverty; (not that all students are poor, but that we may suppose the worst that can happen,) and when I have named his indigence, the whole of his misfortune is mentioned; for he that is poor can enjoy nothing that is good, but must endure necessity in all its forms; sometimes hunger, sometimes cold, sometimes nakedness, and often all three together. Nevertheless his necessity is not so great, but that he eats, though perhaps later than usual, or though he may feed upon the leavings of the rich, or, which is the greatest misery to which a scholar can be reduced, go a-sopping*, as they term it; then they are always admitted to some charitable person’s fire-side or chimney-corner, where, if they cannot warm themselves effectually, they may at least defy the cold; and at night they sleep under cover. I need not descend to minute particulars; such as want of linen, scarcity of shoes, flimsy and thread-bare cloaths, nor the surfeits which they so eagerly incur, when their good fortune sets a plentiful table in their way. By this path, rough and difficult as I have already described it, after many tumblings, slidings, risings, and fallings, they at last attain to the wished degree, which being gained, we have seen many who have passed with a favourable gale of fortune, through these quicksands and straits of Scylla and Charybdis; I say, we have seen many such command and dictate to the world, from a chair of state; their hunger being changed into satiety, their cold into refreshment, their rags into gay apparel, and the mats on which they lay, to richest damask and finest holland: a recompence which their merits most justly enjoys! but their labours, when fairly stated and compared, are infinitely short of the warrior’s, as I shall now clearly demonstrate.’

S 2

CHAPTER

* Alluding to the charity given at the gates of monasteries.

CHAPTER XI.

The Sequel of Don Quixote's curious Discourse on the Subjects of Learning and War.

THE knight proceeded thus : ' Since we began with the student, representing his poverty in all its circumstances, let us see if the soldier be more wealthy ; and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer ; for he is restricted to his miserable pay, which comes always late, if ever, or to what he can plunder by force, with the imminent danger of his life and conscience ; and frequently, his nakedness is such, that his flashed buff doublet serves him instead of coat, shirt, and all other parts of apparel. In a winter campaign, while he remains in the open field, he has nothing to mitigate the severity of the cold, but his own breath, which, as it proceeds from an empty place, must, I believe, be cold, contrary to all the rules of nature : but stay till the approach of night, when it is to be hoped his bed will make amends for all these inconveniencies ; and this, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness, for he may measure as many feet of ground as he thinks sufficient, and there tumble about at pleasure, without any danger of discomposing the sheets. Then, instead of the day and hour of receiving the degrees of his art, comes the day of battle, in which his head is adorned with the doctoral tofsle, made in a form of a pledgit, to stuff the wound made by some ball, which perhaps hath gone through his temples, or left him maimed of a leg or arm ; and even if this should not happen, but merciful Heaven guard and preserve him safe and sound, he continues as poor as ever ; he must risk himself in several more rencounters and battles, and be victorious in each, before his circumstances be bettered ; but these miracles rarely happen. Tell me, gentlemen, have you considered what a small proportion those who make their fortunes by war bear to those who perish in the field ? Doubtless, you must answer, that there is no sort of comparison ; that the slain are scarce to be numbered, while the living

living, who are recompensed for their services, may be comprehended within three figures of arithmetick*. The case of the learned is quite the reverse†; for one way or another, they are all provided: so that though the toil of a soldier is greater, his reward is much less. To this observation, it may be replied, that it is far more easy to reward two thousand scholars than thirty thousand soldiers; for the first are recompensed with offices, which must of course be bestowed on people of their profession; whereas, the others can enjoy no reward, except a share of the property belonging to their master whom they serve: even this impossibility strengthens my asseveration.

‘But waving the consideration, which would lead us into a most intricate labyrinth, let us return to the pre-eminence which arms have over learning; a point hitherto undecided, of such force are the reasons alledged on both sides of the question; one of which, in favour of the last, is, that without letters, the profession of arms could not be supported, because there are laws to which war itself is subject; and all laws fall within the province of letters and learned men. To this observation, the partizans of the other opinion reply, that no laws could be maintained without arms, which preserve the constitution, defend kingdoms, guard cities, scour the highways, and clear the seas of piratical corsairs. In short, that without arms, all republicks, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, journies by land, and voyages by sea, would be exposed to the horror and confusion that attended unbridled war, while it continues in

S 3

all

* i. e. Do not amount to 1000, which is a number expressed by four figures.

† The literal translation is, ‘For, from the skirts—for I would not mention the sleeves.’ The Spaniards, instead of the English phrase, ‘By Hook or by Crook, use this of’ ‘From the sleeves, or the skirts;’ derived from the practice of taylors, who are supposed to cabbage from those parts of the habit in which there is the greatest quantity of cloth; but the knight’s exception of sleeves, on this occasion, seems to have proceeded from a supposition that poor scholars are generally provided for in the church, and consequently wear caTocks, which descend to the heels.

all its licentious privilege and force. It is a general and established maxim, that every thing ought to be esteemed in proportion to what it costs. Now, to become eminent in letters, costs the student much time, watching, hunger, nakedness, vertigoes, indigestion, and their consequences, which are in part mentioned above : but, to acquire in a regular manner the character of a good soldier, a man must undergo all these inconveniences in an incomparably greater degree ; because he is every moment in danger of losing his life. What fear of indigence and poverty can seize and harraßs the student's apprehension, equal to that which must possess the soldier besieged in a fortress, who, being placed centinel or guard in some ravelin or cavalier*, perceives the enemy at work undermining the very spot whereon he stands, without daring to stir from his post, or avoid the danger by which he is so imminently threatened ? All he can do, is to give notice of what passes to his captain, who must endeavour to baffle the foe by some countermine, while he remains upon the place in terror and expectation of being suddenly whirled aloft into the clouds without wings, and of falling thence headlong into the profound abyss : if this danger seems inconsiderable, let us see whether it be equalled or exceeded in the grappling of two galleys, by their prows, in the midst of the extended ocean ; when they are locked and fastened into each other, and the soldier hath not an inch more than two feet of the beak to stand upon, while he sees himself threatened and opposed by as many ministers of death as there are cannon in the enemy's vessel, and these within a spear's length of his body ; and is sensible, that if his feet should chance to slip, he would instantly visit the profound bosom of the sea ; yet, nevertheless, with an intrepid heart, incited and transported by honour, he bears the brunt of their whole artillery, and endeavours by that narrow passage to board the adverse vessel :

* Cavalier is an artificial mount raised in a fortress for the convenience of scouring a field, or opposing a commanding work of the enemy.

vessel : and what is very much to be admired, is, that as soon as one falls, never to rise again till the general resurrection, another occupies his place, and should he also drop into the sea, which, like an enemy, gapes to devour him, another and another still succeeds, without the smallest intermission : an instance of gallantry and boldness the greatest to be found in all the extremities of war. Happy were the ages past, while strangers to those infernal instruments of artillery, the author of which is, I firmly believe, now in hell, enjoying the reward of his diabolical invention, that puts it in the power of an infamous coward to deprive the most valiant cavalier of life ; for, often in the heat of that courage and resolution that fires and animates the gallant breast, there comes a random ball, how or from whence no man can tell, shot off, perhaps, by one that fled, and was afraid at the flash of his own accursed machine, and, in an instant, puts an end to the schemes and existence of a man who deserved to live for ages. This very consideration makes me almost own, that I am sorry for having chosen this profession of a knight-errant in this detestable age ; for, though no danger can daunt my resolution, it gives me some uneasiness to think that powder and shot may deprive me of the opportunity of making myself famous and renowned through the whole globe, for the valour of my arm, and the keenness of my sword : but, let the will of Heaven be fulfilled ! if I accomplish my aim, I shall be more esteemed, because I have faced more danger than ever was incurred by the knights-errant in ages past.’

While the rest of the company were employed in eating, this long harangue was uttered by Don Quixote, who never thought of swallowing a morsel ; though Sancho frequently put him in mind of eating his supper, observing, that he would afterwards have time enough to say what he pleased. The hearers were moved with fresh concern, at seeing a man who in every other subject seemed to have a large share of sense and discernment, lose it so irrecoverably, whenever the discourse turned upon the
curled

curfed mischievous theme of chivalry. The curate observed, that there was a great deal of reason in what he had advanced in favour of arms ; and that he himself, though a graduate, consequently a man of letters, was entirely of the knight's opinion.

Supper being ended, and the table uncovered, while the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, were busied in fitting up the garret of Don Quixote de La Mancha, in which it was determined the three ladies should pass the night by themselves, Don Fernando intreated the captive to recount the story of his life, which he imagined must be both uncommon and entertaining, from the specimen they had already seen, in his arriving thus equipped, in company with the fair Zorayda. To this request the stranger answered, that he would willingly obey his command, though he was afraid the company would not find the relation to their liking ; but, nevertheless, rather than fail in point of obedience, he was ready to make it. The curate and whole company thanked him for his complaisance, and joined in the request ; and he seeing himself besought by so many, said there was no occasion for entreaties, where they might so effectually command : ' Lend me your attention therefore, and you shall hear a true story, perhaps unequalled by those fictions which are usually adorned with all the curious and profound artifice of composition.'

— At this preamble, all present adjusted and composed themselves ; and he perceiving the general silence in which they waited for some performance of his promise, began in this manner, with a grave and agreeable voice.

CHAPTER XII.

In which the Captive recounts his Life and Adventures.

IN a certain place among the mountains of Leon my family had its origin ; more beholden to the liberality of nature than to the smiles of fortune ; though, amidst the narrowness of circumstances which prevails in that country, my father had the reputation

reputation of being rich, and really was so, had he possessed the art of preserving, as he practised the means of spending, his estate. This liberal and profuse disposition was owing to his having been a soldier in his youth; the army being a school in which the miser becomes generous, and the benevolent man grows prodigal; for a covetous soldier is a monster which is rarely seen. My father exceeded the bounds of liberality, and bordered upon those of prodigality; a disposition of very little service to a married man who has children to succeed him in rank as well as name; and he had no less than three; all of them sons, already at an age to chuse for themselves. The old gentleman finding it impossible, as he said, to resist the bent of his inclination, was resolved to deprive himself of the means that induced and enabled him to spend so lavishly, by giving up his estate; as without money Alexander himself must have seemed frugal.

‘One day, therefore, calling us all three together into his chamber, he delivered himself in these or the like words: “Sons, to say I love you, is no more than to say and know you are my own children; though it would seem that I do not love you, by my squandering away the fortune which is your due. But that you may be henceforth convinced that I love you like a true parent, rather than seek your destruction, like a step-father, I am resolved to execute a plan which I have formed a good while ago, and digested with the most mature deliberation. You are now of an age to chuse settlements for yourselves, or at least to pitch upon employments which, in your riper years, may conduce to your honour and advantage. My intention is to divide my estate into four equal parts, three of which you shall receive among you, in equal shares, without the least difference or distinction; and the fourth I will reserve for my own sustenance and support, while Heaven will be pleased to protract the days of my life. But after you have received your portions, I should be glad to find you inclined to follow the paths which I shall propose. We have a saying in Spain, which
I believe

I believe is very true, as indeed all proverbs are, because they are short sentences dictated by long and sage experience; that which I mean contains no more than these words: "The church, the court, or the sea:" as if it more fully expressed the following advice, "He that would make his fortune, ought either to dedicate his time to the church, go to sea as a merchant, or attach himself to the court;" for it is commonly observed that, "The king's crumb is worth the baron's batch." This I mention, because I wish and desire that one of you would follow letters, another merchandize, and a third serve his sovereign in the field, since it is difficult to obtain an office at court: and, although much wealth cannot be expected, there is a great deal of valour and reputation to be acquired in war. In eight days I will give each of you his share, in ready-money, without defrauding you of one farthing, as you will see by my distribution. Tell me, therefore, if you are willing to follow my advice in what I have proposed?" said my father, addressing himself to me as the eldest. After having dissuaded him from parting from his estate, and desired him to spend as much of it as he pleased, observing, that we were young men, and capable of making our own fortunes, I concluded with saying, I would obey his will, and for my own part, chuse to serve God and my king, in adhering to the exercise of arms. My second brother made the same offer, proposing to set sail for the Indies, and employ his stock of ready-money in traffic. The youngest, and I believe the wisest, said he would qualify himself for the church, by going and finishing his studies at Salamanca.

' We having thus agreed in the choice of our different employments, our father embraced us all affectionately, and within the time he had proposed, performed his promise of giving us our portions, which to the best of my remembrance amounted to three thousand ducats each; for an uncle of ours paid ready money for the whole estate, that it might not be alienated from the family. In one day, all three
took

took leave of our worthy father, when I, thinking it a piece of inhumanity to leave him so straitened in his old age, prevailed upon him to accept two thousand of the three I had received, as the remainder was sufficient to accommodate me with all the necessaries of a soldier. Each of my brothers, induced by my example, gave him back one-third of their shares, so that he remained possessed of four thousand ducats in cash, and the value of three thousand more in land, which he did not chuse to sell. At length, I say, we took leave of him, and that uncle whom I have mentioned, not without great concern and many tears on all sides; ; they, charging us to seize every opportunity of making them acquainted with our adventures, either in prosperity or adversity. Having given this promise, and received their embraces and blessing, one took the road to Salamanca, another went to Seville, and I set out for Alicant, where I understood there was a ship taking in a lading of wool for Genoa. Two and twenty years are now elapsed since I left my father's house; and during all that time, though I have written several letters, I never received the least information concerning him or my brothers. What hath happened to myself within that period, I will now briefly relate.

Embarking at Alicant, I had a favourable passage to Genoa, from whence I went to Milan, where I provided myself with arms and some gay military furniture. Then I departed from Piedmont, with a resolution of enlisting in the service; and being upon the road to Alexandria de la Paglia, was informed that the great- duke of Alva was on his march into Flanders. Upon receiving this intimation, I changed my design, attending him to the Low Countries, served in all his campaigns, and was present at the death of the counts Egmont and Horn. There I obtained an ensign's commission in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajara, whose name was Diego de Urbina: but, after I had been some time in Flanders, the news arrived of the league between his holiness Pope Pius the fifth,

fifth, of happy memory, and the Spanish monarchy, against their common enemy the Turk, who about that time had, by means of his fleet, made a conquest of the famous island of Cyprus, which was under the dominion of the Venetians; a most lamentable and unfortunate loss. It was certainly known that the most serene Don John of Austria, natural brother to our good King Philip, was to be general of this league; and the vast preparations for this war were publicly reported. All these rumours raised and excited within me the desire and resolution of being present in a campaign of such expectation; and though I had strong hopes, and indeed certain promises, of being promoted to the rank of a captain as soon as a vacancy should happen, I chose to quit that prospect, and go, as I actually did, to Italy; and luckily for me, Don John of Austria was then at Genoa, just going to embark for Naples, in order to join the Venetian fleet, which he afterwards found at Messina. In short, I served in that most happy campaign, and was advanced to the rank of captain of foot, which honourable post I obtained more by good fortune than merit; and that day which was so fortunate for Christendom, on which the world was convinced of the error they had espoused in believing the Turks invincible by sea; on that day, I say, when the Ottoman pride and insolence were humbled and broke; among so many happy Christians there present, (and sure those who fell were happier than the living victors!) I alone was unfortunate; for, instead of receiving a naval crown, which would have been my reward, had I lived in the Roman ages, on the night that succeeded that glorious day, I found myself a captive loaded with chains! And this was the cause of my misfortune: Uchali, king of Algiers, a bold and fortunate corsair, having attacked and mastered the capitan galley of Malta, in which there remained only three knights alive, and those desperately wounded; the vessel commanded by John Andrea Doria, in which my company was stationed, hastened to her relief, and I doing my duty on that occasion,

on, leaped into the enemy's ship, which disengaging herself immediately from our galley, that was grappled with her, my soldiers were prevented from following their officer, and I found myself alone among my foes, whom, by reason of their numbers, I could not resist; therefore was obliged to submit, after having been almost covered over with wounds; and Uchali, as you have heard, gentlemen, having saved himself with his whole squadron, I remained his prisoner, the only sad person amidst the general joy, and captive among so many that were set free; for full fifteen thousand Christians, who came into the action chained to the Turkish oars, that day recovered their long wished for liberty.

'I was carried to Constantinople, where Selim, the grand Turk, created my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the battle; and as a proof of his valour brought off the high standard of Malta. Next year, which was that of seventy-two, I rowed in the capitan galley of the Three Lanthorns, at Navarino, where I saw and observed the Christians lose the opportunity of taking the whole Turkish fleet in the harbour; for, all the Levantines and Janissaries belonging to it laid their account with being attacked in port, and had actually got in readiness their knapsacks and passamaques, (which are a kind of shoes,) in order to go on shore, and seek their safety in flight, without waiting for the assault; such was the consternation that prevailed among them! But Heaven ordained things to happen in another manner; not thro' any error or neglect of the general who commanded the expedition, but on account of the sins of Christendom; it being the will and permission of God, that we should never want executioners to chastise us. In short, Uchali retreated to Modon, which is an island almost contiguous to Navarino, where he disembarked his men, fortified the mouth of the harbour, and remained until Don John set sail on his return. In this expedition, the galley called the Prize, commanded by a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the capitan galley of Naples called the She-wolf,

the commander of which was that thunderbolt of war, that father of his soldiers, that fortunate and invincible chief, Don Alvaro de Bafan, marquis of Santa Cruz: and I cannot help mentioning what happened at the taking of this prize. The son of Barbaroffa was so cruel, and treated his captives so inhumanly, that when the rowers perceived the She-wolf ready to board, and in a fair way of taking her, they quitted their oars all at once, and seizing the captain, who stood upon the strentrel*, calling to them to row lustily, they tossed him forwards from bench to bench, and hit him so severely as he went along, that before he passed the main-mast, his soul passed into hell. Such was his barbarity, as I have already observed, and such the revenge which their hatred to him inspired!

‘ We returned to Constantinople; and during the following year, which was seventy-three, understood that Don John had taken Tunis, wrested that whole kingdom from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession of the whole; thus cutting off all the hopes of a restoration from Muley Hamida, the most valiant and most cruel Moor of his time. The grand Signior was deeply affected with his loss, and practising that sagacity which is peculiar to all those of his family, clapped up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous of it than he. Next year, being seventy-four, he attacked the goleta and fort, which Don John had left half-finished, near Tunis: and on all these occasions I was present, being tied to the oar, without the least hope of freedom, especially by ransom; for I was resolved not write to my father an account of my misfortune. At length, the goleta and fort were both lost, having been besieged by seventy-five thousand Turkish soldiers, regularly paid, and upwards of four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from the other parts of Africa; this multitude being provided with a vast quantity of warlike stores and ammunition, and

* The strentrel, or estanterol, is a post that supports the awning of the poop,

and attended with such a number of pioneers, that, by throwing handfuls of earth, they might have covered both the places they came to besiege. The goleta, which had been counted impregnable, was first taken; not through any fault of the besieged, who performed all that men could do in its defence, but because experience shewed that trenches could be made with ease in that loose sand, under which, though water was commonly found at the depth of two spans, the Turks, at that time, dug as many fathoms, without finding one drop; and so filling a vast number of sacks, raised their works so high as to overlook the fort; then mounting this cavalier with cannon, kept such a firing as rendered it impossible for the garrison to make any longer defence. It was a common opinion, that our troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the goleta, but opposed the disembarkation in the plain; however, those who talk in that manner, speak at random, and must be persons of small experience in such affairs; for, if the whole garrison in both places scarce amounted to seven thousand soldiers, how could such a small number, though ever so valiant take the field, and at the same time defend the forts, against such a multitude of foes? And how could the forts be possibly maintained without supplies in an enemy's country, when they were hemmed in by such a numerous and obstinate army? But others thought, and I am of the same opinion, that Heaven manifested a particular grace and favour to Spain, in permitting them to destroy that rendezvous and pretence of mischief, that sink, sponge, and devourer of infinite sums of money, which were there unprofitably spent, without serving any other purpose than that of preserving the memory of its being the most happy conquest of the invincible Charles the Fifth: as if it was necessary for those stones to support his fame, which is already immortal. The fort was also yielded, though the Turks won it by inches; for the garrison behaved with such gallantry and resolution, that in two and twenty general assaults, the enemy lost upwards of twenty-five-thousand men;

and of the three hundred Spanish soldiers that remained alive, they did not make one prisoner who had not been wounded during the siege; a clear and certain proof of the obstinate valour with which the places were defended. A small fort, or tower, that stood in the middle of the lake, under the command of Don Juan Zanoquera, a Valentian knight, and celebrated soldier, surrendered upon terms: but Don Pedro Puertocarrero, general of the goleta, was made prisoner; and though he did all that man could do in defence of the place, he was so deeply affected by the loss of it, that he died of grief on the road to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him captive. The general of the fort, whose name was Gabaio Cerbellon, a Milanese gentleman, a great engineer, and excellent soldier, was likewise taken prisoner; and in these two forts perished many persons of note, among whom was one Pagan d'Oria, a knight of St. John, a gentleman of a most generous disposition, as appeared from his excessive liberality to his brother, the famous Juan Andrea d'Oria; and what made his death still more lamentable, was, that he perished by the hands of some Arabs, to whom, seeing the fort already lost, he trusted himself, relying upon their promise to carry him, disguised in a Moorish dress, to Tobarca, which is a small port or settlement belonging to the Genoese, who fish for coral on that part of the coast; but those perfidious Arabs cut off his head, which they carried to the general of the Turkish navy, who fulfilled upon them our Castilian proverb, which imports, that though we love the treason, we abhor the traitor; for it was reported, that he ordered them all to be hanged, because they had not brought him alive.

‘ Among the Christians who were taken in the fort, was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andalusia, who had been ensign in the garrison, a soldier of great worth and rare endowments, particularly blessed with a happy talent for poetry. This circumstance I mention, because it was his fate to belong to our galley, where he was

my

my companion at the oar, and fellow-slave ; and before we departed from that harbour, he composed two songs, by way of epitaph, upon the goleta and the fort. As I have them both by heart, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the company if I repeat them.'

When the captive mentioned Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, who smiled ; and when the stranger was going to repeat the songs, one of the three said to him, ' Before you proceed, I beg the favour to know what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar ? ' ' all that I know of the matter,' replied the captive, ' is, that after having staid two years at Constantinople, he made off in the habit of an *arnaut** with a Greek spy : but I do not know whether or not he obtained his liberty, though I believe he succeeded ; for about a year after, I saw the same Greek at Constantinople ; but but I had not an opportunity to enquire about the success of their scheme.' Then I can satisfy you in that particular,' resumed the cavalier : ' Don Pedro is my brother, and now lives at home, in good health and easy circumstances, blessed with a wife and three hopeful sons.'—' Thanks be to God for the great mercies bestowed upon him ! ' answered the captive ; ' for in my opinion, there is no happiness on earth equal to that of liberty regained.' ' Besides,' said the gentleman, ' I retain in my memory the songs which my brother composed.' ' Be so good, then,' replied the stranger, ' as to entertain the company with them ; for, doubtless, you can repeat them more perfectly than I can.' ' With all my heart,' said the cavalier : ' that upon the goleta runs thus.'

CHAPTER XIII.

The Continuation of the Captive's History.

I.

- " YE happy shades, whose deeds renown'd
- " Have freed you from encumb'ring clay ;
- " From this low scene, where woes abound,
- " Ascending to eternal day.

II. " With

* A Dalmatian trooper.

Don Quixote.

II.

- " With glorious zeal your bosoms glow'd,
- " Your bodies brav'd excessive toil :
- " Your blood with that of Pagans flow'd,
- " To drench the hostile, barren soil.

III.

- " Your lives, but not your courage, fail'd ;
- " Death seal'd your just, victorious claim ;
- " Enjoy, still honour'd and bewail'd,
- " Immortal happiness and fame"

' These are the very words which I remember,' said the captive. ' And if my memory does not fail me,' replied the gentleman, ' the other upon the fort is this.

I.

- " Lo! from yon ruins on the desert plain,
- " Oppress'd with numbers, in th' unequal fight,
- " Three thousand souls of Christian warriors slain,
- " To happier regions wing'd their joyous flight.

II.

- " Yet not before in vain they had essay'd
- " The force and vigour of their dauntless arms ;
- " Till wearied and reduc'd, though undismay'd,
- " They welcom'd death, encompass'd with alarms

III.

- " On Afric's coast, as records tell,
- " The scene of past and present woes,
- " More valiant bodies never fell,
- " More spotless spirits never rose."

The songs were not dissil'd ; and the captive, rejoicing at the good fortune of his comrade, proceeded thus in his narration.

' The goleta and forts being taken, the Turks ordered the first to be dismantled, the other being quite demolished before it was surrendered ; and that this might be done with the less trouble, and greater dispatch, it was undermined in the three parts ; but they could by no means blow up the old walls, which seem'd to be the weakest part, while that which was executed by Fratin, was destroyed with great facility. In short, the victorious fleet returned in triumph to Constantinople, where, in a few months happened the death of my master Uchali, who went
by

by the name of Uchali Fartax, which, in the language of that country, signifies the Scabby Renegado; for such he actually was; and it is a custom among the Turks, to bestow epithets upon people, derived either from some defect or virtue inherent in them: this method they practise, because they have but four families distinguished by particular names, and these are descended from the house of Ottoman; so that the rest, as I have observed, adopt some appellation, either from the blemishes of the body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper, therefore, tugged at the oar, during fourteen years, as slave to the Grand Signior; and when he was turned of thirty-four apostatized, out of resentment against a Turk, who struck him at the oar; renouncing his religion, that he might be able to revenge the affront. Such was the gallantry and conduct, that, without practising those vile steps and methods by which the sultan's favourites are raised, he was promoted to the throne of Algiers, and afterwards created general at sea, which is the third post in the empire. He was a native of Calabria a man of good morals, and behaved with great humanity to his slaves, who, to the number of three thousand, were, at his death, in consequence of his last will, divided between his renegadoes and the Grand Signior, who is also co-heir with the children of all his deceased subjects. I fell to the share of a Venetian, who had been a common sailor when he was taken; and Uchali had such an affection for him, that he enjoyed the greatest share of his favour, and became the most cruel renegado that ever was known. This man, whose name was Azanaga, acquired great riches, and even succeeded to the crown of Algiers, to which place I accompanied him from Constantinople, with some degree of satisfaction, at the thoughts of being so near my own country; not that I intend to send home an account of my unhappy fate, but to see if fortune would not prove more favourable at Algiers than at Constantinople, where I had laid a thousand schemes for my escape, without having an opportunity of putting one of them in execution;

execution ; but I was in hope of finding at Algiers some other more effectual means of obtaining that which I so ardently desired : for the hope of gaining my liberty never forsook my breast ; on the contrary, when all my pains, efforts, and expectations, miscarried, far from abandoning myself to despair, I endeavoured to find out some new expedient, which though ever so frail and unsubstantial, served to support my spirits, and flatter my imagination. Thus I made shift to live within a house or prison, called a bath, in which the Turks confine the Christian captives, whether belonging to the king, or private persons, or of that class which they call magazine-slaves : these are the captives of the council, who serve the state in public works, and other kinds of day-labour ; and find great difficulty in obtaining their freedom, because they belong to the community, and have no particular master with whom they can treat concerning their ransom, even though they can command money for the purpose.

‘ In these baths, as I have already said, some private persons lodge their slaves, especially when their ransom is agreed upon ; and there they remain secure, and at their ease until it arrives. Neither do the King’s captives, who are to be ransomed, go out to work with the rest of the crew, except when the money is delayed ; and then, that they may be induced to write with more importunity, they are sent out with the rest to cut wood, an office of no small mortification and toil. As they knew I had been a captain, I in vain assured them, that I had neither interest nor money, they put me into the number of those who were to be ransomed, loading me with a chain, rather to denote my condition than to secure my person ; so that I spent my time in that bath, among a great many cavaliers and people of fashion, who were thus marked and designed for ransom ; and though we were sometimes, nay, almost always, exposed to hunger and nakedness, nothing gave us so much pain, as to hear and see, upon every occasion, the new and unheard-of cruelties which my master exercised upon the Christians. He was every day

day hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon such slight occasions, frequently without any cause assigned, that the Turks themselves owned he acted thus out of mere wantonness or barbarity, as being naturally of a savage disposition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The person who used the greatest freedom with him was a Spanish soldier, called such-a-one de Saavedra; who, though he did many things which those people will not soon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chastised, nor even chid him with one hasty word; and yet the least of all his pranks was sufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the stake: nay, he himself was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount some of that soldier's actions, which, perhaps, might entertain and surprise you more than the relation of my own story.

‘ But to return to the thread of my narration: just over the yard of our prison were the windows of a rich and principal Moor; but, according to the custom of the country, they were rather like peep-holes than windows, and even these covered with very thick and close lattices. One day I chanced to be on the terrace of our gaol, with three of my companions, passing the time in trying which of us could leap farthest in our shackles, the rest of the Christians being gone out to work: I casually lifted up my eyes, and perceived a cane with a handkerchief tied to it, held out at one of those little openings I have mentioned, and waving to and fro, as if by way of signal for some of us to go and catch it. This object was no sooner observed, than one of my companions ran hastily to the place that was directly under it, to see if the cane would be dropped, or what would be the consequence; but when he arrived, it was pulled up, and moved from one side to another, as if a man should signify his dissent from any proposal, by shaking his head: when the Christian returned, the cane was lowered again, with the same motion as at first, upon which another of our company

pany tried the experiment, but succeeded no better than the first: a third went, and miscarried like the other two. Observing their disappointment, I was resolved to try my fortune also: accordingly, I had no sooner placed myself under the cane than it was dropped, and fell down within the bath, just at my feet. I snatched it up immediately, and untied the handkerchief, in which I found a knot containing ten zianiys, which are pieces of bad gold, current among the Moors, each of them valued at ten rials of our money. It would be superfluous to say that I rejoiced at this windfall: indeed, my joy was equal to my surprise; for I could not conceive from whence that present could come, especially to me; the circumstance of the cane's being refused to every other person plainly shewing that the favour was intended for me. I pocketed this lucky sum, broke the cane, returned to the terrace, and looked at the window, through which appeared a very white hand, that opened the lattice, and hastily shut it again: from this circumstance we understood, or at least imagined, that we owed the present to some lady who lived in that house; and, in token of thanks, made our obeisance in the Moorish manner, by bowing the head, bending the body, and crossing the hands upon the breast. Soon after this ceremony, a small cross, made of cane, was held out at the window, and immediately withdrawn; a signal which confirmed us in the opinion that we were befriended by some Christian woman, who lived as a slave in that house: but this supposition was changed, when we reflected upon the whiteness of the hand, and the bracelets which we had perceived; and then we concluded that she must be one of those Christian renegades whom their masters frequently take to wife; and even think themselves fortunate in having such an opportunity; for they esteem them much more than the women of their own nation. But all our conjectures were wide of the truth.

‘ From this day forward, our whole entertainment was to gaze at the window, as the north in which the star of the cane had appeared; but full fifteen days

days elapsed, before we had another glimpse either of that or the hand, or indeed of any other signal; and during this interval, though we endeavoured, by all the means in our power, to learn who lived in that house, and whether or not there was a Christian renegado in it, we never could get any other information, but that it belonged to a rich Moor of great note, called Agimorato, who had been alcaide of Pata, an office of great honour among that people; but, when we least expected another shower of zianiys, the cane re-appeared all of a sudden, with another handkerchief, and a larger knot than before; and this occurrence happened as formerly, when none but ourselves were in the bath: we made the usual experiment, each of my three companions going towards it as at first without success, until I approached, and then it was immediately dropped. I untied the knot, within which I found forty crowns in Spanish gold, and a paper written in Arabian characters, with a large cross at the head of the page. I kissed the sacred sign, put up the money, returned to the terrace, where we made our obeisance: the hand appearing again, I made signs that I should read the letter, and then the window was shut. We were equally pleased and perplexed at this event, for none of us understood Arabick; and although our impatience to know the contents of the paper was very great, the difficulty of finding an interpreter was still greater. At length I determined to trust a renegade, a native of Murcia, who had professed himself my friend, and given me such pledges of his fidelity, as obliged him to keep any secret I should think proper to impart: for those renegades who intend to return to Christendom, usually carry about with them certificates signed by the principal captives, attesting, in the most ample form they can devise, that such a renegade is an honest man, who hath always been obliging to the Christians, and is desirous of making his escape with the first opportunity. Some there are who procure these testimonials with a good intention; others use them occasionally, as the instruments of
their

their craft; for, going to rob and plunder on the Christian coasts, if they should chance to be shipwrecked or taken, they produce their certificates, and observe that these papers will shew the real design of their coming on a cruize with Turks, which was no other than to take the first occasion of returning to their native country; by these means they escape the first fury of resentment, and are reconciled to the church, without suffering the least damage; but when they see their opportunity, they return to Barbary, and resume their former way of life; whereas those who procure recommendations with a good design, make use of them accordingly, and remain in peace among the Christians. Such a renegado was this friend, who had obtained certificates from my companions, conceived in the strongest terms of confidence and applause; for which, had he been detected, the Moors would have burned him alive. I knew that he could both speak and write the Arabian tongue; but, before I would disclose the whole affair, I desired him to read that paper, which I had found by chance in a corner of my cabin. He opened it accordingly, and having pored and perused it a good while, muttering between his teeth, I asked if he understood the contents. He answered in the affirmative, bidding me, if I chose to have the literal meaning, to furnish him with pen and ink, that he might translate it the more exactly. I accordingly accommodated him with what he desired; and when he had made an end of the translation at his own leisure, he said, "This that I have written in Spanish is the literal meaning of that Moorish paper; and you are to take notice, that wheresoever you meet with the words *Lela Marien*, they signify our Lady the Blessed Virgin."

'The paper contained these words—"When I was a child, my father had a woman slave, who in my own language taught me the Christian worship, and told me divers things of *Lela Marien*. This Christian died, and I am sure her soul did not go to the fire, but to *Ala*; for I saw her twice after her death, and she advised me to go to the land of
the

the Christians, where I should see Lela Marien, by whom I was beloved. I know not which way to go ; many Christians I have seen from this window, but not one who seems so much a gentleman as yourself. I am very beautiful and young, and have a great deal of money in my possession. If thou canst find out any method of carrying me to thy country, thou shalt there be my husband, if thou art so inclined ; but, if that be contrary to thy inclination, I shall not be uneasy, for Lela Marien will provide me with a spouse. I write this with my own hand ; let nobody read it, but such as you can trust. Beware of the Moors, for they are altogether deceitful ; therefore I am very much concerned, for I would not have it disclosed to any person whatever ; because, if it should come to my father's ears, he would instantly cause me to be sunk in a well, and covered with stones. I will fasten a thread to the cane, to which thou mayest tie thine answer ; and if thou hast not a proper person to write for thee in Arabick, let me know by signs ; for Lela Marien will help me to understand them. May she and Ala preserve thee, by means of this cross, which I often kiss, according to the direction of my deceased slave !”

‘ You may easily conceive, gentlemen, whether or not we were surprized and rejoiced at the contents of this paper. Indeed, the symptoms of joy and admiration appeared so plain in our behaviour, that the renegado suspected it was not found by accident, but actually written and addressed to one of our company. He accordingly intreated us to tell him if his conjecture was true, protesting that we might safely trust to his fidelity, and assuring us, if we would favour him with our confidence, he would venture his life in procuring our freedom. So saying, he pulled from his bosom a crucifix of metal, and, with many tears, swore by the God represented under the form of that image, in whom he, though a wretched sinner, fully and faithfully believed, that he would be trusty and secret in every thing we should please to communicate ; for he firmly believed, and as it were prognosticated, that by means

of her who had written the paper, we should all obtain liberty, and he accomplish that which he had so much at heart, namely, his re-admission into the bosom of his holy mother church, from which he, through his ignorance and guilt, had been, like a rotten member, divided and cut off. This declaration he made with so many tears and signs of repentance, that we unanimously agreed to intrust him with the affair, and accordingly gave him an account of every thing that had happened, without suppressing one circumstance; and shewed him the window at which the cane appeared: so that from thence he had took his mark of the house, resolving to inform himself, with great care and caution, of the name and quality of those who lived in it. Meanwhile, we were all of opinion, that there was a necessity for answering the billet; and there being a person present, who could perform that office, the renegado that instant wrote in Arabick what I dictated, which was literally as I shall now repeat; for, of all the material circumstances of that affair, not one hath escaped my memory, which will retain them all to my last breath. In short, this was the answer which I sent to the beautiful Moor.

" My dear Lady!

" Mayest thou be protected by the true Ala, and that blessed Mary the real mother of God, who, because she loves thee, hath put it into thy heart to go to the land of Christians: beseech, her therefore, that she will be pleased to teach thee how thou mayest obey her commands; for she is so benevolent that she will grant thy request. For my own part, and in behalf of those who are my fellow prisoners, I promise to serve thee with our whole power, even unto death. Fail not to write and give me notice of what thou shalt resolve to do; and I will always answer thy letters; for the great Ala hath favoured us with the friendship of a Christian captive, who can speak and write thy language, as thou wilt perceive by this paper; wherefore thou mayest communicate thy will and pleasure to us without fear. As to thy offer of becoming my wife, when thou shalt be

be safely settled in the land of the Christians, I pledge myself thine, on the faith of a good Christian; and know, that those of our religion perform their promises more punctually than the Moors. God, and his mother Mary, take my dear lady into their holy protection!"

' This letter being written and sealed, I waited two days until the bath was empty, and then went to the usual place on the terrace, to look for the cane, which in a little time appeared. I no sooner perceived the sign, though I could not see who made it, than I held up the letter, to make her understand that she should fasten a thread to the cane; but that was already done, and I tied the paper to it accordingly. In a little time our star appeared again, loaded with the white flag of peace; which being dropped, I took it up, and found, in different coins of gold and silver, to the amount of fifty crowns, which increased our satisfaction fifty-fold, and confirmed us in the hope of obtaining our freedom. That same night our renegade returned, and told us, he was informed the house was inhabited by the same Moor I have mentioned under the name of Agimorato, who was excessively rich, and had only one daughter to inherit his whole fortune; that, by the current report in the city, she was the most beautiful woman in Barbary; and that many of the viceroy's who went thither, had demanded her in marriage, but she would never yield her consent: he likewise understood that she had once a Christian slave, who had died some time ago; so that all these circumstances agreed with the contents of her letter. We then consulted with the renegade about the means of transporting ourselves with the Moorish lady into Christendom; and, at length, we came to the resolution of waiting for another intimation from Zorayda, which is the name of her who now desires to be called Maria; for we plainly perceived, that by means of her, and no other, we should be enabled to surmount all the difficulties that occurred.

' Having come to this determination, the renegade bid us give ourselves no uneasiness for he

would either procure our liberty or forfeit his own life. The bath being full of people during four days, no cane appeared all that time ; at the end of which the usual solitude prevailing, we perceived it with a handkerchief so pregnant as to promise a most happy birth. I stood under it ; the whole was dropped as usual, and I found in the handkerchief another paper with one hundred crowns in gold, without any mixture of other coin. The renegade being then present, we carried him to our cabin, where we desired him to read the letter, which he interpreted in these words.

“ I know not, dear Sir, how to give directions about our passage into Spain ; nor hath Lela Marien told me, though I have earnestly implored her assistance. But what may be easily effected is this : I will from this window furnish you with a great quantity of money ; so that you may ransom yourself and your companion ; and going to the land of the Christians, purchase a bark, with which you may return for the rest ; and you will find me in my father’s garden, which is by the gate of Barbazon, close to the sea-side. There I shall be during the whole summer, with my father and servants, and from hence you may, in the night, carry me to the bark without fear. But remember thou shalt not be my husband ; otherwise I will pray to Marien to chastise thee. If thou canst depend upon no other person for purchasing the bark, ransom thyself for that purpose. I know thou wilt be more apt than any other body to return, because thou art a gentleman and a Christian. Be sure to inform thyself well about the garden. When I see thee walking where thou art at present, I shall know the bath is empty, and provide thee with more money. *Ala preserve thee, my dear gentleman !*”

‘ These were the contents and purport of the second paper ; which being read in presence of us all, each proposed himself as the person to be ransomed, promising to go and return with the utmost punctuality. I likewise offered myself for that purpose. But the renegado opposed the proposal ; saying, that
he

he could by no means consent that one should be set free, before we had all obtained our liberty; because experience had taught him, how ill those who are free perform the promises they have made in their captivity; for prisoners of note had often practised the expedient of ransoming one of their number, to go to Valencia or Majorca, with money to purchase an armed bark, and return for his companions, but they never saw his face again; for having once obtained his own liberty, the dread of losing it again, by returning, blots all manner of obligations out of his remembrance. As a confirmation of the truth of what he alledged, he briefly recounted a case which had lately happened to some Christian gentleman, attended with the strangest circumstances ever known even in these parts, where the most uncommon and surprizing events occur almost every day. In short, he told us, the most practicable and prudent scheme was, to give him the money we should receive for our ransom, with which he would purchase a bark at Algiers, under pretence of becoming a merchant, and trading to Tetuan, and the other places on that coast; and that, being master of the vessel, he would soon contrive the means of disengaging us from the bath, and getting us all on board; especially if the Moorish lady should perform her promise in supplying us with money sufficient to pay the ransom of our whole company; in which case, being no longer slaves, we might embark with the greatest ease and safety, even at noon-day. The greatest difficulty that occurred, was the backwardness of the Moors to allow a renegade to purchase or command a vessel, unless it be a large cruizer for pirating; because they suspect, especially if he be a Spaniard, that his sole motive, in buying a small bark, is to make his escape into Christendom; but he undertook to remedy that inconvenience, by giving a share of the bark, and profits of the merchandize, to a Tagarin Moor; by which means he should be master of the bark, and of consequence have it in his power to accomplish the whole affair.

‘ Although

‘ Although, in the opinion of me and my companions, there was no better plan than that of sending to Majorca for a bark, as the Moorish lady had proposed, we durst not contradict the sentiments of the renegade, lest he, being disobliged by our acting contrary to his intention, should make a discovery of our correspondence with the fair Moor, and endanger not only our lives, but also that of Zorayda, for which we would have willingly sacrificed our own. We therefore determined to rely upon God and the renegado; and immediately wrote an answer to Zorayda, importing, that we would adhere in every thing to her advice, which was as prudent as if it had been dictated by Lela Marien; and that it depended solely upon her, either to hasten or retard the negotiation; pledging my faith anew to become her spouse. In consequence of this intimation, the very next day, when the bath happened to be empty, she, at different times, by means of the cane and handkerchief, transmitted two thousand crowns in gold, with a paper signifying, that on the first Jama, which is Friday, she should set out for her father’s garden; but, before her departure, supply us with more money; and desired us to inform her, if we should find that insufficient; for she would give us as much as we could desire, her father having such vast sums, that he would never be sensible of what she took, especially as all his keys were in her possession. We immediately accommodated the renegado with five hundred crowns, for the purchase of the bark; with eight hundred more I ransomed myself, depositing the money with a Valentian merchant then residing at Algiers, who bargained for my ransom with the king, and obtained my freedom, upon giving his word to pay the money on the arrival of the first ship from Valencia; for, if he had paid it immediately, the king would have suspected that the ransom had been some time at Algiers, and that the merchant had hitherto detained it for his own convenience. In short, my master was so contentious, that I durst by no means disburse the money at once. On the Thursday before the fair Zorayda removed to her father’s

father's country-house, she gave us another thousand crowns, and apprized us of her departure; intreating me, as soon as I should be ransomed, to make myself acquainted with her father's garden, and find some opportunity of going thither to see her. I answered, in few words, that I would obey her in every thing; desiring she would fervently recommend us to Lela Marien in all those prayers which she had learned of the slave.

'This affair being transacted, means were concerted for ransoming my three companions; lest, seeing me at liberty, and themselves confined, since I had money enough to procure their freedom, they should be chagrined, and tempted by the devil to do something to the prejudice of Zorayda; for, although their honour and integrity might have secured me against any such apprehension, I would not run the smallest risk, and therefore took care they should be ransomed by the same channel through which my liberty was obtained; depositing the whole sum required in the merchant's hands, that he might with more certainty and confidence act the part of their bondsman; though we never disclosed to him our secret commerce with Zorayda, for fear of what might happen.'

202

12



